

# HUDIBRAS.<sup>K</sup>

---

IN THREE

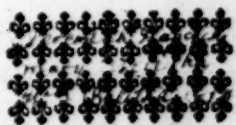
PARTS.

---

Corrected, with several Additions  
and Annotations.

---

*Mary*



*Belitha*

---

LONDON

Printed, and are to be sold by *W. Rogers*, at the  
*Sun* against *St. Dunstan's Church*  
in *Fleet-street*. 1684.





10 N 903

and the other to be (M) by the  
of the St. Dunstons (Church)  
to the British Museum

# HUDIBRAS.

---

*The First Part.*

---

Written in the time of the

## Late Wars.

---

CORRECTED & AMENDED

WITH

Several Additions and Annotations.

---

L O N D O N,

Printed by T. N. for Henry Herringman, and  
are to be sold by T. Basset at the George  
in Fleetstreet, 1 6 8 4.



LONDON

Printed by T. & A. H. Newington  
in the City of London  
in the year 1844

# HUDIBRAS.

## The ARGUMENT of The FIRST CANTO.

*sir Hudibras his passing worth;  
The manner how he sally'd forth:  
His Arms and Equipage are shown;  
His Horse's vertues, and his own.  
Th' Adventure of the Bear and Fiddle  
Is sung, but breaks off in the middle.*

## CANTO I.

**W**hen civil Fury first grew high,  
And men fell out they knew not why;  
When hard words, jealousies and Fears,  
Set Folks together by the Ears,  
And made them fight, like mad or drunk,  
For Dame Religion as for Punk,

Whose honesty they all durst swear for,  
 Though not a man of them know wherefore :  
 When *Gospel-Trumpeter*, surrounded  
 With long-ear'd rout to Battel sounded,  
 And Pulpit, Drum Ecclesiastick,  
 Was beat with fist, instead of a stick :  
 Then did Sir *Knight* abandon dwelling,  
 And out he rode a Colonelling.

A Wight he was whose very sight wou'd  
 Entitle him *Mirror of Knighthood* ;  
 That never bent his stubborn knee  
 To any thing but Chivalry ;  
 Nor put up blow, but that which laid  
 Right Worshipful on Shoulder-blade ;  
 Chief of Domestick Knights and Errant,  
 Either for Chartel or for Warrant :

Great on the Bench, Great in the Saddle,  
That could as well bind o're, as swaddle:  
Mighty he was at both of these,  
And styl'd of *War* as well as *Peace*.

(So some Rats of amphibious nature,  
Are either for the Land or Water.)

But here our Authors make a doubt,  
Whether he were more wise, or stout  
Some hold the one, and some the other:

But howsoe'r they make a pother,  
The difference was so small, his Brain  
Outweigh'd his Rage but half a Grain:

Which made some take him for a Tool  
That Knaves do work with, call'd a Fool,

And offer to lay wagers, that  
As *Mountaigne*, playing with his Cat,

complains she thought him but an Ass,  
Much more she would Sir *Hudibras*.

( For that's the Name our valiant Knight  
 To all his Challenges did write. )  
 But they'r mistaken very much,  
 'Tis plain enough he was no such.  
 We grant, although he had much wit,  
 H' was very shie of using it,  
 As being loath to wear it out,  
 And therefore bore it not about.  
 Unless on Holy-days, or so,  
 As Men their best Apparel do.  
 Beside 'tis known he could speak *Greek*,  
 As naturally as Pigs squeek:  
 That *Latine* was no more difficile,  
 Than to a Blackbird 'tis to whistle.  
 Being rich in both he never scanted  
 His Bounty unto such as wanted;  
 But much of either would afford:  
 To many that had not one word.



For *Hebrew* Roots, although th'are found  
To flourish most in barren ground,  
He had such plenty, as suffic'd  
To make some think him circumcis'd :  
And truly so perhaps, he was  
'Tis many a Pious Christians case,

He was in *Logick* a great Critick,  
Profoundly skill'd in Analytick.  
He could distinguish, and divide  
A Hair'twixt *South* and *South-West* side :  
On either which he would dispute,  
Confute, change hands, and still confute,  
He'd undertake to prove by force  
Of Argument, a Man's no Horse.  
He'd prove a Buzard is no Fowl,  
And that a *Lord* may be an Owl ;

A Calf an *Alderman*, a Goose a *Justice*,  
 And Rooks *Committee-men* and *Trustees*  
 He'd run in Debt by Disputation,  
 And pay with *Ratiocination*.  
 All this by *Syllogism*, true  
 In Mood and Figure, he would do.

For *Rhetorick*, he could not ope  
 His mouth, but out there flew a *Trope*;  
 And when he hapned to break off  
 I'th middle of his speech, or cough,  
 H'had hard words, ready to shew why,  
 And tell what Rules he did it by.  
 Else when with greatest Art he spoke,  
 You'd think he talk'd like other folk.  
 For all a *Rhetoricians Rules*  
 Teach nothing but to name his Tools:

His ordinary Rate of speech  
 In loftiness of sound was rich;  
 A *Babilonish* dialect,  
 Which learned Pedants much affect.  
 It was a parti-colour'd drefs  
 Of patch'd and pyball'd Languages:  
 'Twas *English* cut on *Greek* and *Latin*,  
 Like *Fustian* heretofore on *Sattin*.  
 It had an odd promiscuous Tone,  
 As if h' had talk'd three parts in one.  
 Which made some think when he did gabble,  
 Th' had heard three Labourers of *Babel*;  
 Or *Cerberus* himself pronounce  
 A Leash of Languages at once.  
 This he as volubly would vent,  
 As if his stock would ne'r be spent.  
 And truly to support that charge  
 He had supplies as vast and large,

For he could coyn or counterfeit  
New words with little or no wit:  
Words so debas'd and hard, no stone  
Was hard enough to touch them on.  
And when with hasty noise he spoke 'em,  
The Ignorant for currant took 'em.  
That had the Orator who once,  
Did fill his Mouth with Pebble stones  
When he harangu'd ; but known his Phrase  
He would have us'd no other ways,  
In *Mathematicks* he was greater.  
Then *Tycho-Brahe*, or *Erra Pater* :  
For he by *Geometrick* scale  
Could take the size of *Pots of Ale* ;  
Resolve by *Signes* and *Tangents* straight,  
If *Bread* or *Butter* wanted weight ;

And

And wisely tell what hour o'th day

The Clock does strike, by *Algebra*:

Beside he was a shrewd *Philosopher*;

And had read every Text and Gloss over:

What e're the crabbed'st Author hath

He understood b'implicit Faith,

What ever *Sceptick* could inquire for;

For every *why* he had a *wherefore*:

Knew more then forty of them do,

As far as words and terms could go.

All which he understood by Rote,

And as occasion serv'd, would quote;

No matter whether right or wrong;

They might be either said or sung.

His Notions fitted things so well,

That which was which he could not tell;

But oftentimes mistook the one  
 For th' other, as Great Clerks have done.  
 He could reduce all things to Acts  
 And knew their Natures by Abstracts,  
 Where Entity and Quiddity  
 The Ghosts of defunct Bodies lie;  
 Where Truth in Person does appear,  
 Like words congeal'd in Northern Air.  
 He knew *what's what*, and that's as high  
 As *Metaphysick* wit can fly.  
 In *School-Divinity* as able  
 As he that hight *Irrefragable*;  
 Profound in all the *Nominal*  
 And real ways beyond them all;  
 And with as delicate a hand  
 Could twist as tough a Rope of Sand;  
 And weave fine Cobwebs, fit for skull  
 That's empty, when the Moon is full;

Such



Such as take Lodgings in a Head  
That's to be lett unfurnished:  
He could raise Scruples dark and nice,  
And after solve 'em in a trice:  
As if Divinity had catch'd  
The Itch, of purpose to be scratch'd;  
Or, like a Mountebank, did wound  
And stab her self with doubts profound,  
Only to shew with how small pain  
The sores of faith are cur'd again;  
Although by woful proof we find,  
They always leave a Scar behind.  
He knew the Seat of Paradise,  
Could tell in what degree it lies:  
And, as he was dispos'd, could prove it,  
Below the Moon, or else above it  
What *Adam* dreamt of when his Bride  
Came from her Closet in his side:

Whether



Whether the Devil tempted her  
 By a *High Dutch* Interpreter:  
 If either of them had a Navel;  
 Who first made Musick malleable:  
 Whether the Serpent at the fall  
 Had cloven Feet, or none at all.  
 All this without a Gloss or Comment,  
 He would unriddle in a moment  
 In proper terms, such as men smatter  
 When they throw out and miss the matter.

For his *Religion* it was fit  
 To match his Learning and his Wit:  
 'Twas *Presbyterian* true blew,  
 For he was of that stubborn Crew  
 Of Errant Saints, whom all men grant  
 To be the true Church *Militant*.

Such as do build their Faith upon  
The holy Text of *Pike* and *Gun*;  
Decide all Controversies by  
Infallible *Artillery*;  
And prove their Doctrine Orthodox  
By Apostolick *Blows* and *Knocks*;  
Call Fire and Sword and Desolation,  
*A godly-thorough-Reformation*,  
Which always must be carry'd on,  
And still be doing, never done:  
As if Religion were intended  
For nothing else but to be mended.  
A Sect, whose chief Devotion lies  
In odd perverse Antipathies;  
In falling out with that or this,  
And finding somewhat still amiss:  
More peevish, cross, and spleenatick.  
Then Dog distract, or Monky sick,

That

That with more care keep Holy-day  
 The wrong, than others the right way :  
 Compound for Sins, they are inclin'd to,  
 By damning those they have no mind to ;  
 Still so perverse and opposite,  
 As if they worshipp'd God for spight.  
 The self-same thing they will abhor  
 One way, and long another for.  
 Free-will they one way disavow,  
 Another, nothing else allow.  
 All Piety consists therein  
 In them, in other men all Sin.  
 Rather than fail, they will defy  
 That which they love most tenderly ;  
 Quarrel with *minc'd Pies*, and disparage  
 Their best and dearest friend, *Plum-porridge* ;  
 Fat *Pig* and *Goose* it self oppose,  
 And blaspheme *Custard* through the *Nose*.

Th' Apostles of this fierce Religion,  
Like *Mahomet's*, were Afs and Widgeon,  
To whom our Knight by fast instinct  
Of Wit and Temper was so linkt,  
As if Hypocrisy and Non-sence  
Had got th' Advoufon of his Conscience.

Thus was he gifted and accouter'd,  
We mean on th' inside, not the outward;  
That next of all we shall discuss:  
Then listen Sirs, It followeth thus.

His tawny *Beard* was th' equal grace

Both of his Wisdom and his Face;

In Cut and Dy so like a Tile,

A sudden view it would beguile:

The upper part thereof was Whey,

The neither Orange mixt with Grey:

This hairy Meteor did denounce  
 The fall of Scepters and of Crowns;  
 With grizly type did represent  
 Declining Age of Government;  
 And tell with Hieroglyphick Spade,  
 Its own grave and the State's were made.  
 Like *Sampson's* Heart-breakers, it grew  
 In time to make a Nation rue;  
 Though it contributed its own fall,  
 To wait upon the publick downfall.  
 It was Canonick, and did grow  
 In Holy Orders by strict vow;  
 Of Rule as fullen and severe,  
 As that of rigid *Cordeliere*;  
 'Twas bound to suffer Persecution  
 And Martyrdome with resolution;  
 T' oppose it self against the hate  
 And vengeance of th' incens'd State:

In whose defiance it was worn,  
Still ready to be pull'd and torn,  
With red-hot Irons to be tortur'd,  
Revil'd, and spit upon, and martyr'd.  
Maugre all which, 'twas to stand fast,  
As long as Monarchy should last.  
But when the State should hap to reel,  
'Twas to submit to fatal steel,  
And fall, as it was consecrate  
A Sacrifice to fall of State;  
Whose thred of life the fatal Sisters  
Did twist together with its Whiskers,  
And twine so close, that time should never,  
In life or death, their fortunes sever,  
But with his rusty Sickle mow  
Both down together at a blow.



So learned *Taliacotins* from  
 The brawny part of Porter's Bum,  
 Cut supplemental Noses, which  
 Would last as long as Parent breech :  
 But when the Date of *Noek* was out,  
 Off dropt the Sympathetick Snout.  
  
 His *Back*, or rather Burthen, show'd  
 As if it stoop'd with its own load.  
 For as *Æneas* bore his Sire  
 Upon his Shoulders through the Fire :  
 Our Knight did bear no less a Pack  
 Of his own Buttocks on his Back :  
 Which now had almost got the Upper-  
 Hand of his Head, for want of Crupper.  
 To poize this equally, he bore  
 A *Pannch* of the same bulk before :

Which



Which still he had a special care  
To keep well cram'd with thrifty fare;  
As White-pot, Butter-milk, and Curds,  
Such as a Countrey house affords;  
With other Victual, which anon  
We further shall dilate upon,  
When of his Hofs we come to treat,  
The Cup-bord where he kept his meat.

His *Doublet* was of sturdy Buff,  
And though not Sword, yet Cudgel-proof;  
Whereby 'twas fitter for his use,  
That fear'd no blows but such as bruise.

His *Breeches* were of rugged Woollen,  
And had been at the Siege of *Bullen*;  
To old King *Harry* so well known,  
Some Writers held they were his own.

Through they were lin'd with many a piece  
Of Ammunition-Bread and Cheese,  
And fat Black puddings, proper food  
For Warriors that delight in Blood :  
For, as we said, He always chose  
To carry Vittle in his Hose.  
That often tempted Rats, and Mice,  
The Ammunition to surprize :  
And when he put a Hand but in  
The one or th'other Magazine,  
They stoutly in defence on't stood  
And from the wounded Foe drew bloud  
And till th' were storm'd, and beaten out  
Ne'r left the Fortify'd Redoubt ;  
And though Knights Errant, as some think,  
Of old did neither eat nor drink,  
Because when thorough Deserts vast  
And Regions desolate they past,

When

Where Belly-timber above ground  
Or under was not to be found,  
Unless they graz'd, there's not one word  
Of their Provision on Record:  
Which made some confidently write,  
They had no stomachs, but to fight,  
'Tis false: for *Arthur* wore in Hall  
Round Table like a Farthingal,  
On which, with Shirt pull'd out behind,  
And eke before his good Knights din'd.  
Though 'twas no Table, some suppose,  
But a huge pair of round Trunk-hose;  
In which he carry'd as much meat,  
As he and all his Knights could eat,  
When laying by their Swords and Truncheons,  
They took their Breakfasts or their Nuncheons,  
But let that pass at present, lest  
We should forget where we digress;

As Learned Authors use, to whom  
 We leave it, and to th' purpose come.  
 His puissant *Sword* unto his side  
 Near his undaunted Heart wasty'd,  
 With Basket-hilt, that would hold broth,  
 And serve for Fight and Dinner both.  
 In it he melted Lead for Bullets  
 To shoot at Foes; and sometimes Pullets,  
 To whom he bore so fell a Grutch,  
 He ne'r gave quarter to any such.  
 The trenchant blade, *Toledo* trusty,  
 For want of fighting was grown rusty,  
 And ate into it self, for lack  
 Of some body to hew and haek.  
 The peaceful *Scabbard* where it dwelt,  
 The Rancor of its Edge had felt:  
 For of the lower end two handfull,  
 It had devoured 'twas so manfull;

And

And so much scorn'd to lurk in case,  
 As if it durst not shew its face.  
 In many desperate Attempts,  
 Of Wars, Exigents, Contempts,  
 It had appear'd with Courage bolder  
 Than Sergeant *Bum*, invading shoulder.  
 Oft had it ta'en possession,  
 And Pris'ners too, or made them run,  
 This Sword a *Dagger* had his Page,  
 That was but little for his age:  
 And therefore waited on him so,  
 As Dwarfs upon Knights Errant do.  
 It was a serviceable Dudgeon,  
 Either for fighting or for drudging  
 When it had stabb'd, or broke a head,  
 It would scrape Trenchers, or chip Bread,  
 Toast Cheese or Bacon, though it were

To bait a Mouse-trap, 'twould not care.  
'Twould make clean shooes, and in the Earth  
Set Leeks and Onions, and so forth.  
It had been Prentice to a Brewer,  
Where this and more it did endure.  
But left the Trade, as many more  
Have lately done on the same score.

In th' Holsters, at his Saddle-bow,  
Two aged Pistols he did stow,  
Among the surplus of such meat  
As in his Hofs he could not get.  
They were upon hard Duty still,  
And every night stood Sentinel,  
To guard the Magazine i' th' Hofs  
From two legg'd and from four legg'd Foes.

Thus



Thus clad and fortify'd, Sir Knight  
From peaceful home set forth to fight.  
But first with nimble active force  
He got on th' outside of his Horse;  
For having but one stirrup ty'd  
T' his Saddle, on the further side,  
It was so short, h' had much ado  
To reach it with his desperate Toe.  
But after many strains and heaves,  
He got up to the Saddle eaves.  
From whence he vaulted into th' seat  
With so much vigor, strength, and heat  
That he had almost tumbled over  
With his own weight, but did recover,  
By laying hold on Tail and Mane,  
Which oft he us'd instead of Reyn.

But



But now we talk of mounting Steed,  
Before we further do proceed,  
It doth behove us to say something,  
Of that which bore our valiant *Bumkin*.  
The Beast was sturdy, large, and tall,  
With Mouth of meal and Eyes of Wall:  
I would say Eye, for he had but one,  
As most agree though some say none.  
He was well stay'd, and in his Gate  
Preserv'd a grave, majestick state.  
At Spur or Switch no more he skipt,  
Or mended pace, then *Spaniard* whipt:  
And yet so fiery, he would bound,  
As if he griv'd to touch the Ground:  
That *Cæsar's* Horse, who, as Fame goes,  
Had Corns upon his Feet and Toes,  
Was not by half so tender-hooft,  
Nor trode upon the ground so soft.

And

And as that Beast would kneel and stoop,  
(Some write) to take his Rider up:  
So *Hudibras* his ('tis well known)  
Would often do, to set him down.  
We shall not need to say what lack  
Of Leather was upon his back:  
For that was hidden under pad,  
And breech of Knight gall'd full as bad.  
His strutting Ribs on both sides show'd  
Like furrows he himself had plow'd:  
For underneath the skirt of Pannel,  
'Twixt every two there was a Channel.  
His dragling Tail hung in the Dirt,  
Which on his Rider he would hurt  
Still as his tender side he prickt,  
With arm'd heel or with unarm'd kick:  
For *Hudibras* wore but one Spur,  
As wisely knowing, could he stir

To active-trot one side of's Horse,  
The other would not hang an Arse.

A *Squire* he had whose name was *Ralph*,  
That in th' adventure went his half.  
(Though Writers, for more stately tone,  
Do call him *Ralpho*, 'tis all one:  
And whan we can with Meeter safe,  
We'll call him so, if not plain *Raph*,  
For Rhime the Rudder is of Verses,  
With which like Ships they steer their courses.  
An equal stock of Wit and Valour  
He had laid in, by birth a Taylor.  
The mighty *Tyrian* Queen that gain'd  
With subtle shreds a Tract of Land,  
Did leave it with a Castle fair  
To his great Ancestor, her Heir:

From

From him descended cross-legg'd Knights,  
Fam'd for their Faith and warlike Fights  
Against the bloody Canibal,  
Whom they destroy'd both great and small.  
This sturdy Squire had as well  
As the bold Trojan Knight, seen Hell,  
Not with a counterfeited Pass  
Of Golden Bough, but true Gold-lace.  
His Knowledge was not far behind  
The Knight's, but of another kind,  
And by another way came by,  
Some call it Gifts, and some New light;  
A liberal Art, that costs no pains  
Of Study, Industry, or Brains.  
His Wits were sent him for a Token,  
But in the Carriage crackt and broken,  
Like Commendation Nine-pence, crookt,  
With to and from my Love, it lookt,

He

He ne'r consider'd it; as loath  
To look a Gift-Horse in the mouth;  
And very wisely would lay forth  
No more upon it than 'twas worth.  
But as he got it freely, so  
He spent it frank and freely too.  
For Saints themselves will sometimes be  
Of Gifts that cost them nothing, free.  
By means of this, with *hem* and *cough*,  
Prolongers to enlightned Snuff,  
He could deep Mysteries unriddle,  
As easily as thread a Needle;  
For as of Vagabonds we say,  
That they are ne'r beside their way:  
Whate'r men speak by this *New light*,  
Still they are sure to be i' th' right.  
'Tis a *dark-Lantern* of the Spirit,  
Which none see by but those that bear it:

A Light that falls down from on high,  
For Spiritual Trades to censure by;  
An *Ignis Fatuus* that bewitches,  
And leads Men into Pools and Ditches,  
To make them dip themselves, and found  
For Christendom in dirty pond;  
To dive like Wild-fowl for Salvation,  
And fish to catch Regeneration.  
This Light inspires, and plays upon  
The noise of Saint like Bag-pipe drone,  
And speaks through hollow empty Soul,  
As through a Trunk, or whispering hole,  
Such language as no mortal Ear  
But spiritual Eaves-droppers can hear.  
So *Phæbus* or some friendly Muse  
Into small Poets song infuse;  
Which they at second-hand rehearse  
Through Reed or Bag-pipe, Verse for Verse.



Thus *Ralph* became infallible,  
As three or four-legg'd Oracle,  
The ancient Cup, or modern Chair;  
Spoke truth point-blank, though unaware:  
For mystick Learning, wonderous able  
In Magick *Talisman*, and *Cabal*,  
Whose primitive tradition reaches  
As far as *Adam's* first green breches:  
Deep-sighted in Intelligences,  
Idea's, Atomes, Influences;  
And much of *Terra Incognita*,  
Th' Intelligible world could say;  
A deep occult Philosopher,  
As learn'd as the *Wild Irish* are,  
Or Sir *Agrippa*, for profound  
And solid Lying much renown'd;



He *Anthroposophus*, and *Floud*,  
And *Jacob Behmen* understood;  
Knew many an Amulet and Charm,  
That would do neither good nor harm:  
In *Rosy-Crucian* Lore as Learned,  
As he that *Verè adeptus* earned.  
He understood the speech of Birds  
As well as they themselves do words:  
Could tell what subtlest *Parrots* mean,  
That speak and think contrary clean;  
What *Member 'tis* of whom they talk,  
When they cry *Rope*, and *Walk, Knave, Walk*.  
He'd extract numbers out of matter,  
And keep them in a Glass, like water,  
Of Sov'raign pow'r to make men wise;  
For dropt in blere, thick-sighted Eies,  
They'd make them see in darkest night,  
Like Owls, though pur-blind in the light.

By help of these (as he profess)   
 He had *First Matter* seen undrest:   
 He took her naked all alone,   
 Before one Rag of *Form* was on.   
 The *Chaos* too he had descry'd,   
 And seen quite through, or else he ly'd:   
 Not that of Past-board which men shew   
 For Groats at Fair of *Bartholomew*;   
 But its great Grandfire, first o' th' name,   
 Whence that and *Reformation* came:   
 Both Cousin-germans, and right able   
 T' inveigle and draw in the Rabble.   
 But *Reformation* was, some say,   
 O' th' younger house to *Puppet-play*;   
 He could foretell what's ever was   
 By consequence to come to pass,   
 As Death of Great men, Alterations,   
 Diseases, Battels, Inundations.

All this without th' eclipse of Sun,  
Or dreadful Comet, he hath done  
By inward light, a way as good,  
And easy to be understood.  
But with more lucky hit than those  
That use to make the Stars depose,  
Like Knights o' th' Post, and fallly charge  
Upon themselves what others forge:  
As if they were consenting to  
All mischief in the World men do:  
Or like the Dev'l, did tempt and sway 'em  
To Rogueries, and then betray 'em.  
They'l search a Planet's house, to know  
Who broke and robb'd a house below:  
Examine *Venus*, and the *Moon*  
Who stole a Thimble or a Spoon:  
And though they nothing will confess,  
Yet by their very looks can guess,

And tell what guilty Aspect bodes,  
Who stole, and who receiv'd the Goods.  
They'l question *Mars*, and by his look  
Detect who 'twas that nimm'd a Cloke:  
Make *Mercury* confels and peach  
Those Thieves which he himself did teach.  
They'l find i' th' Physiognomies  
O' th' Planets all mens destinies.  
Like him that took the Doctor's Bill,  
And swallow'd it instead o' th' Pill.  
Cast the Nativity o' th' Question,  
And from Positions to be quest on,  
As sure as if they knew the Moment  
Of Natives birth, tell what will come on't.  
They'l feel the Pulses of the Stars,  
To find out Agues, Coughs, Catarrhs;  
And tell what *Crysis* does divine  
The Rot in Sheep, or Mange in Swine,

In men what gives or cures the Itch,  
What makes them Cuckolds, poor or rich:  
What gains or loses, hangs or saves;  
What makes men great, what fools or Knaves;  
But not what wise, for only of those  
The Stars (they say) cannot dispose,  
No more than can the Astrologians.  
There they say right, and like true *Trojans*,  
This *Ralpho* knew, and therefore took  
The other course, of which we spoke.

Thus was th' accomplish'd Squire endu'd  
With Gifts and Knowledge, per'lous shrewd.  
Never did trusty Squire with Knight,  
Or Knight with Squire jump more right.  
Their Arms and Equipage did fit,  
As well as Vertues, parts, and wit.

And tell what guilty Aspect bodes,  
Who stole, and who receiv'd the Goods.  
They'l question *Mars*, and by his look  
Detect who 'twas that nimm'd a Cloke:  
Make *Mercury* confels and peach  
Those Thieves which he himself did teach.  
They'l find i' th' Physiognomies  
O' th' Planets all mens destinies.  
Like him that took the Doctor's Bill,  
And swallow'd it instead o' th' Pill.  
Cast the Nativity o' th' Question,  
And from Positions to be quest on,  
As sure as if they knew the Moment  
Of Natives birth, tell what will come on't.  
They'l feel the Pulses of the Stars,  
To find out Agues, Coughs, Catarrhs;  
And tell what *Cryfts* does divine  
The Rot in Sheep, or Mange in Swine,



In men what gives or cures the Itch,  
What makes them Cuckolds, poor or rich:  
What gains or loses, hangs or saves;  
What makes men great, what fools or Knaves;  
But not what wise, for only of those  
The Stars (they say) cannot dispose,  
No more than can the Astrologians.  
There they say right, and like true *Trojans*.  
This *Ralpho* knew, and therefore took  
The other course, of which we spoke.

Thus was th' accomplish'd Squire endu'd  
With Gifts and Knowledge, per'lous shrewd.  
Never did trusty Squire with Knight,  
Or Knight with Squire jump more right.  
Their Arms and Equipage did fit,  
As well as Vertues, parts, and wit.



Their Valours too were of a Rate,  
And out they fall'd at the Gate;  
Few miles on horseback had they jogged,  
But fortune unto them turn'd dogged.  
For they a sad Adventure met,  
Of which we now prepare to Treat:  
But e'r we venture to unfold  
Atchievements so resolv'd and bold,  
We should, as learned Poets use,  
Invoke th' assistance of some *Muse*;  
However Criticks count it sillier  
Than Juglers talking t'a Familiar.  
We think 'tis no great matter which,  
They're all alike, yet we shall pitch  
On one that fits our purpose most,  
Whom therefore thus do we accost.

Thou

Thou that with Ale or viler Liquors,  
Didst inspire *Withers*, *Pryn*, and *Vickers*,  
And force them, though it were in spight  
Of Nature, and their Stars, to write;  
Who, as we find in sullen Writs,  
And cross-grain'd Works of modern Wits,  
With Vanity, Opinion, Want,  
The wonder of the Ignorant,  
The praises of the Author, penn'd  
By himself, or wit-ensuring friend,  
The Itch of Picture in the Front,  
With Bays, and wicked Rhyme upon't,  
All that is left o' th' forked Hill  
To make men scribble without skill,  
Canst make a Poet, spight of fate,  
And teach all People to translate;  
Though out of Languages in which  
They understand no Part of Speech:

Assist me but this once, I'mplore,  
And I shall trouble thee no more.

In Western Clime there is a Town  
To those that dwell therein well known;  
Therefore there needs no more be sed here  
We unto them refer our Reader:  
For brevity is very good,  
When w' are, or are not understood.  
To this Town People did repair  
On days of Market or of Fair,  
And to crack'd Fiddle, and hoarse Tabor  
In merriment did drudge and labor:  
But now a sport more formidable  
Had rak'd together Village rabble.  
Twas an old way of Recreating,  
Which learned Butchers call *Bear-baiting*:

A bold advent'rous exercise,  
With ancient *Hero's* in high prize;  
For Authors do affirm it came  
From *Isthmian* or *Nemean* game.  
Others derive it from the *Bear*  
That's fixt in Northern Hemisphere,  
And round about the Pole does make  
A circle like a *Bear* at stake,  
That at the Chain's end wheels about,  
And over-turns the Rabble-rout.  
For after solemn Proclamation  
In the *Bear's* name (as is the fashion,  
According to the Law of Arms,  
To keep men from inglorious harms)  
That none presume to come so near  
As forty foot of stake of *Bear*;  
If any yet be so fool-hardy,  
T' expose themselves to vain Jeopardy;

If they come wounded off and lame,  
No honour's got by such a maim:  
Although the Bear gain much, b'ing bound  
In honor to make good his ground.  
When he's engag'd, and take no notice,  
If any press upon him, who 'tis,  
But let them know at their own cost  
That he intends to keep his post.  
This to prevent, and other harms,  
Which always wait on seats of Arms,  
(For in the hurry of a Fray  
'Tis hard to keep out of harm's way)  
Thither the *Knight* his course did steer,  
To keep the peace 'twixt *Dog* and *Bear*;  
As he believ'd h' was bound to do  
In Conscience and Commission too.

And

And therefore thus bespoke the Squire;  
 We that are wisely mounted higher  
 Than Constables; in Curule wit,  
 When on Tribunal Bench we sit,  
 Like Speculators, should foresee,  
 From *Pharos* of Authority.  
 Portended Mischiefs farther then  
 Low Proletarian Fighting-men.  
 And therefore being inform'd by bruit,  
 That *Dog* and *Bear* are to dispute;  
 For so of late men fighting name,  
 Because they often prove the same;  
 (For where the first does hap to be,  
 The last does coincide)  
*Quantum in nobis*, have thought good,  
 To save th' expence of Christian blood,

And



And try if we by Mediation  
Of Treaty and accommodation  
Can end the Quarrel, and compose  
The bloody Duel without blows.  
Are not our Liberties, our Lives,  
The Laws, Religion, and our Wives  
Enough at once to lye at stake,  
For Cov'nant and the Cause's sake;  
But in the quarrel Dogs and Bears,  
As well as we must venture theirs?  
This Feud by Jesuits invented,  
By evil Counsel is fomented,  
There is a Machiavilian Plot,  
(Though ev'ry Nare *olfact* it not)  
A deep design in't, to divide  
The well-affected that confide,  
By setting Brother against Brother,  
To claw and curry one another.

Have

Have we not enemies *plus satis*,  
 That *Cane & angue pejus* hate us?  
 And shall we turn our fangs and claws  
 Upon our own selves, without cause?  
 That some occult design doth ly  
 In bloudy *Cynar & omachy*,  
 Is plain enough to him that knows  
 How Saints lead Brothers by the Nose.  
 I wish my self a Pseudo-Prophet,  
 But sure some mischief will come of it:  
 Unless by providential wit  
 Or force we averruncate it.  
 For what design, what interest  
 Can Beast have to encounter Beast?  
 They fight for no espoused *Cause*,  
 Frail *Priviledge*, *Fundemental Laws*;  
 Nor for a *thorough Reformation*,  
 Nor *Covenant*, nor *Protestation*;  
 Nor

Nor *Liberty of Consciences*,  
 Nor Lords and *Commons Ordinances*,  
 Nor for the *Church*, nor for *Church Lands*,  
 To get them in their own no Hands;  
 Nor *evil Counsellors* to bring  
 To Justice that seduce the Kings;  
 Nor for the worship of us men,  
 Though we have done as much for them.  
 Th' *Egyptians* worshiped *Dogs*, and for  
 Their faith made fierce and zealous War.  
 Others ador'd a *Rat*, and some  
 For that Church suffer'd martyrdom.  
 The *Indians* fought for the truth  
 Of th' *Elephant*, and *Monkey's Tooth*;  
 And many, to defend that faith,  
 Fought it out *mordicus* to death.  
 But no Beasts ever was so slight,  
 For Man, as for his God, to fight.

They

They have more wit, alas! and know  
Themselves and us better than so,  
But we, we only do infuse  
The Rage in them like *Boute-fens*.  
'Tis our example that instills  
In them th' infection of our ills.  
For, as some late Philosophers  
Have well observ'd, Beasts that converse  
With Man, take after him, as Hogs  
Get Pigs all th' year, and Bitches Dogs.  
Just so by our example Cattle  
Learn to give one another Battel.  
We read in Nero's time, the Heathen,  
When they destroy'd the *Christian Brethren*,  
They sow'd them in the skins of Bears,  
And then set Dogs about their Ears  
From whence, no doubt, th' invention came  
Of this lewd Antichristian Game.

To this, quoth *Ralpho*, Verily,  
 The Point seems very plain to be,  
 It is an Antichristian Game,  
 Unlawful both in thing and name,  
 First for the *name*, The word *Bear-baiting*  
 Is carnal, and of man's creating:  
 For certainly there's no such word  
 In all the *Scripture* on record.  
 Therefore unlawful and a sin,  
 And so is (secondly) the *thing*.  
 A vile *Assembly* 'tis, that can  
 No more be prov'd by *Scripture* than  
*Provincial, classick, National;*  
 Mere humane Creature-Cobwebs all.  
 Thirdly, it is *Idolatrous*.  
 For when men run a-whoring thus  
 With their *Inventions* whatso'er  
 The thing be, whether *Dog* or *Beast*,

It is Idolatrous and *Pagan*  
No less than worshiping of *Dagon*.

Quoth *Hudibras*, I smell a *Rat*;  
*Ralpho*, thou dost prevaricate.

For though the *Thesis* which thou lay'st  
Be true *ad amussim* as thou say'st:

(For that *Bear-baiting* should appear  
*Jure Divino* lawfuller

Than *Synods* are, thou dost deny  
*Totidem verbis* so do I)

Yet there's a fallacy in this:  
For if by fly *Homocosis*,

Thou wouldst *Sophistically* imply  
Both are unlawful, I deny.

And I (quoth *Ralpho*) do not doubt  
But *Bear-baiting* may be made out



In Gospel-times, as lawful as is

*Provincial or Parochial Classis:*

And that both are so near of kin,

And like in all as well as sin,

That put them in a bag and shake 'em,

Your self o' th' sudden would mistake 'em,

And not know which is which, unless

You measure by their Wickedness:

For 'tis not hard t' imagine whether

O' th' two is worst, though I name neither.

Quoth *Hudibras*, Thou offer'st much,

But art not able to keep touch.

*Mira de lente*, as 'tis i' th' Adage,

*Id est*, to make a Leek a Cabbage.

Thou canst at best but overstrain

A Paradox, and th' own hot brain

For

For what can *Synods* have at all  
With *Bears* that's analogical?  
Or what relation has debating  
Of Church-Affairs with *Bear-baiting*?  
A just comparison still is,  
Of things *ejusdem generis*.  
And then what *Genus* rightly doth  
Include, and comprehend them both?  
If *Animal*, both of us may  
As justly pass for *Bears* as they.  
For we are Animals no less,  
Although of different *Specieses*.  
But, *Ralpho* this is no fit place  
Nor time to argue out the Case:  
For now the Field is not far off,  
Where we must give the world a proof  
Of Deeds, not Words, and such as suit  
Another manner of Dispute.

A Controversy that affords  
 Actions for Arguments, not Words!  
 Which we must manage at a rate  
 Of Prowess and Conduct adequate  
 To what our place and fame doth promise,  
 And all the godly expect from us:  
 Nor shall they be deceived, unless  
 W' are flurr'd and outed by success:  
 Success, the mark no mortal win,  
 Or surest hand can always hit:  
 For whatsoe're we perpetrate,  
 We do but row, w<sup>e</sup> are steer'd by Fate,  
 Which in success o<sup>r</sup> diminishes,  
 For spurious causes, noblest merits.  
 Great Actions are not always true Sons  
 Of great and mighty Resolutions:  
 Nor do the boldst attempts bring forth  
 Events still equal to their worth;

But sometimes fail, and in their stead  
Fortune and Cowardise succeed.  
Yet we have no great cause to doubt,  
Our actions still have born us out.  
Which though th' are known to be so ample,  
We need no copy from example,  
We are not the only person durst  
Attempt this Province, nor the first.  
In Northern Clime a valourous Knight  
Did whilom kill his Bear in fight,  
And wound a Fidler : we have both  
Of these the objects of our wrath,  
And equal Fame and Glory from  
Th' Attempt or Victory to come.  
'Tis sung, There is a valiant *Mamaluke*  
In forreign Land, yclep'd —  
To whom we have been oft compar'd,  
For Person, Parts, Address, and Beard ;

Both equally reputed stout,  
 And in the same Cause both have fought.  
 He oft in such Attempts as these  
 Came off with glory and success,  
 Nor will we fail in the execution,  
 For want of equal Resolution,  
 Honor is, like a Widow, won  
 With brisk Attempt and putting on;  
 With entering manfully, and urging;  
 Not slow approaches, like a Virgin.  
 This said, as once the *Phrygian* Knight,  
 So ours with rusty steel did smite  
 His *Trojan* Horse, and just as much  
 He mended pace upon the touch;  
 But from his empty stomach groan'd  
 Just as that hollow Beast did sound,

And

And angry answer'd from behind,  
 With brandish'd Tail and blast of Wind.  
 So have I seen with armed host,  
 A Wight bestride a *Common-weal*;  
 While still the more he kick'd and spur'd,  
 The less the sullen Jade has stir'd.

## CANTO II.

THE  
 And twice the World, as it could move,  
 Was made of fighting and of love;  
 Just so knowers are, not what else  
 Is in them all, but Love and Battle.



---

The ARGUMENT of

The SECOND CANTO.

---

*The Catalogue and Character  
Of th' Enemies best Men of War;  
Whom in a bold Harangue, the Knight  
Defy's, and challenges to fight:  
H' incounters Talgol, routs the Bear,  
And takes the Fidler Prisoner;  
Conveys him to enchanted Castle,  
There shuts him fast in Wooden Bastile.*

---

CANTO II.

---

**T**Here was an ancient sage *Philosopher*,  
That had read *Alexander Ross* over,  
And swore the World, as he could prove,  
Was made of *Fighting* and of *Love*:  
Just so *Romances* are, for what else  
Is in them all, but *Love* and *Battles*?

---

O' th'

O' th' first of these w<sup>l</sup> have no great matter  
 To treat of, but a World o' th' latter;  
 In which to do the injur'd Right  
 We mean in what concerns just fight.  
 Certes our Authors are to blame,  
 For to make some well sounding name  
 A Pattern fit for modern Knights,  
 To copy out in Frays and Fights,  
 (Like those that a whole street do raze,  
 To build a Palace in the place.)  
 They never care how many others  
 They kill, without regard of Mothers,  
 Or Wives, or Children, so they can  
 Make up some fierce dead-doing man,  
 Compos'd of many ingredient Valors  
 Just like the Manhood of nine Taylors.  
 So a wild Tartar, when he spies  
 A man that's handsome, valiant, wife,

If he can kill him, thinks t'inherite  
His Wit, his Beauty, and his Spirit :  
As if just so much he enjoy'd  
As in another is destroy'd.  
For when a Giant's slain in fight,  
And mow'd o'rthwart, or cleft downright,  
It is a heavy case, no doubt.  
A man should have his Brains beat out,  
Because he's tall, and has large Bones ;  
As men kill Beavers for their Stones.  
But as for our part, we shall tell  
The naked Truth of what befell ;  
And as an equal friend to both  
The Knight and Bear, but more to Troth,  
With neither Faction shall take part,  
But give to each his due desert :  
And never coyn a formal lye on't,  
To make the Knight o'rcome the Giant.

This

This b'ing profess'd, we hope's enough,  
 And now go on where we left off.

They ro'd, but Authors having not  
 Determin'd whether Pace or Trot,

That is to say, whether *Tollutation*,  
 As they do term't, or *Succussion*.)

We leave it, and go on, as now  
 Suppose they did, no matter how.

Yet some from subtle hints have got  
 Mysterious light, it was a Trot.

But let that pass: they now begun  
 To spur their living Engines on:

For as whipp'd Tops and bandy'd Balls,  
 The learned hold, are Animals:

So Horses they affirm to be  
 Mere Engines made by Geometry,

And

If he can kill him, thinks t'inherit  
His Wit, his Beauty, and his Spirit :  
As if just so much he enjoy'd  
As in another is destroy'd.  
For when a Giant's slain in fight,  
And mow'd o'rthwart, or cleft downright,  
It is a heavy case, no doubt.  
A man should have his Brains beat out,  
Because he's tall, and has large Bones ;  
As men kill Beavers for their Stones.  
But as for our part, we shall tell  
The naked Truth of what befell ;  
And as an equal friend to both  
The Knight and Bear, but more to Troth,  
With neither Faction shall take part,  
But give to each his due desert :  
And never coyn a formal lye on't,  
To make the Knight o'come the Giant.

This b'ing profess'd, we hope's enough,  
 And now go on where we left off.

They ro'd, but Authors having not  
 Determin'd whether Pace or Trot,

That is to say, whether *Tollutation*,  
 As they do term't, or *succussion*.)

We leave it, and go on, as now  
 Suppose they did, no matter how.

Yet some from subtle hints have got  
 Mysterious light, it was a Trot.

But let that pass: they now begun

To spur their living Engines on:

For as whipp'd Tops and bandy'd Balls,

The learned hold, are Animals:

So Horses they affirm to be

Mere Engines made by Geometry,

All Figures of the Engine.

And



And were invented first from Engines,  
 As *Indian Britans* were from *Penguins*.  
 So let them be, and, as I was saying,  
 They their live Engines ply'd, not staying  
 Until they reach'd the fatal champain,  
 Which the Enemy did then incamp on,  
 The dire *Pharſalian* Plain, where Battel  
 Was to be wag'd 'twixt puissant Cattel,  
 And fierce Auxiliary Men,  
 That came to aid their Brethren :  
 Who now began to take the Field  
 As from his Steed the Knight beheld :  
 For as our modern wits behold,  
 Mounted a Pick-back on the Old,  
 Much further off, much further he  
 Rais'd on his aged Beast could see :  
 Yet not sufficient to defoy  
 All postures of the enemy.

And therefore orders the bold Squire up his  
To advance, and view their Body nigher,  
That when their motions he had known,  
He might know how to fit his own.  
The Bescon of two is fit  
Mean while he stopp'd his willing Steed,  
To fit himself for Martial deed:  
Both kinds of mettle he prepar'd,  
Either to give blows, or to ward,  
Courage within, and Steel without,  
To give, or to receive a Rout.  
His Death-charg'd Pistols he did fit well,  
Drawn out from life-preserving vittle.  
These being prim'd, with force he labour'd  
To free's Sword from retentive Scabbard:  
And after many a painful pluck,  
He clear'd at length the rugged Tuck.  
Then shook himself, to see that Prowess  
In Scabbard of his Arms fate loose;

And

And rais'd upon his desperate foot  
 On stirrup side he gaz'd about,  
 Portending Bloud, like Blazing Star,  
 The Beacon of approaching War.  
 The Squire advanc'd with greater speed  
 Than could b' expected from his Steed;  
 But far more in returning made,  
 For now the Foe he had survey'd  
 Rang'd, as to him they did appear,  
 With *Van, main Battel, Wings and Rear.*

In th' head of all this Warlike Rabble  
*Crowders* match'd, expert and able:  
 Instead of Trumpet and of Drum,  
 That makes the Warrior's stomach come,  
 Whose noise whets Valour sharp, like Beer  
 By Thunder turn'd to Vineger.

(For if a Trumpet sound or Drum beat,  
Who has not a months mind to combat?)  
A squeaking Engine he apply'd  
Unto his Neck, on North-east side,  
Just where the Hangman does dispose  
To special friends the fatal Noose:  
For 'tis great Grace when *Statesmen* straight  
Dispatch a friend, let others wait.  
His warped Ear hung o're the strings,  
Which was but source to *Chitterlings*:  
For Guts, some write, e're they are sodden,  
Are fit for Musick; or for Pudden:  
From whence men borrow ev'ry kind  
Of Minstrelsy, by string or wind.  
His grizly Beard was long and thick,  
With which he strung his Fiddle-stick.  
For he to Horse-tail scorn'd to owe,  
For what on his own skin did grow.

Chiron, the four legg'd Bard, had both  
A Beard and Tail of his own growth,  
And yet by Authors 'tis averr'd,  
He made use only of his Beard.  
In *Staffordshire* where Vertuous worth  
Does raise the Minstrelsy, not Birth;  
Where Bulls do chuse the boldest King  
And Ruler, o're the men of string;  
(As once in *Persia*, tis said,  
Kings were proclaim'd by a Horse that neigh'd)  
He bravely vent'ring at a Crown,  
By chance of War was beaten down,  
And wounded sore: his Leg then broke,  
Had got a Deputy of Oke:  
For when a shin in fight is cropt,  
The knee with one of timber's propt;  
Esteem'd more honourable than the other,  
And takes place, though the younger Brother.

Next march'd brave *Orsin*, famous for  
Wise Conduct, and success in War:  
A skilful Leader, stout, severe,  
Now Marshal to the Champion Bear.  
With Truncheon tipp'd with Iron-head,  
The Warrior to the lists he led;  
With solemn march and stately pace,  
But far more grave and solemn face:  
Grave as the Emperor of *Pegn*,  
Or *Spanish* Potentate *Don Diego*.  
This Leader was of knowledge great,  
Either for Charge or for Retreat.  
Knew when t' engage his *Bear* *Pel-miel*  
And when to bring him off as well.  
So Lawyers, lest the *Bear* Defendant,  
And Plaintiff *Dog* should make an end on't;



Do stave and tail with *Writs of Error*,  
*Reverse of Judgment*, and *Demurrer*,  
To let them breath a while, and then  
Cry whoop, and set them on agen.

As *Romulus* a Wolf did rear,  
So he was dry-nurs'd by a Bear,  
That fed him with the purchas'd prey  
Of many a fierce and bloudy fray;  
Bred up, where Discipline most rare is,  
In Military *Garden-Paris*.

For Soldiers heretofore did grow  
In Gardens, just as Weeds do now;  
Until some splay-foot Polyticians,  
T' *Apollo* offer'd up Petitions,  
For licenſing a new invention  
Th' 'ad found out, of an antique Engine  
To root out all the Weeds that grow  
In publick Garden at a blow,

And

And leave th' Herbs standing. Quoth Sir *Sun*,  
My friends, that is not to be done.

Not done ? quoth *Statesmen*; yes, an't please ye,  
When 'tis once known you'll say 'tis easy.

Why then let's know it, quoth *Apollo*.

We'l beat a Drum, and they'l all follow.

A Drum (quoth *Phæbus*) troth that's true,

A pretty invention quaint and new.

But though of Voice and Instrument

We are ('tis true) chief President ;

We such loud Musick do not profess,

The Devil's Master of that Office,

Where it must pass, if 't be a Drum,

He'l sign it with *Cler. Parl. Dom. Com.*

To him apply your selves, and he

Will soon dispatch you for his Fee.

They did so, but it prov'd so ill,

Th' had better have let them grow there still.

But to resume what we discoursing  
We e on before, that is, stout *Orsin* :  
That which so oft by sundry writers  
Has been apply'd t' almost all fighters,  
More justly may b' ascrib'd to this,  
Than any other Warrior, (*viz.*)  
None ever acted both parts bolder,  
Both of a Chieftain and a Soldier.  
He was of great descent and high,  
For Splendor and Antiquity,  
And from Celestial origine  
Deriv'd himself in a right Line.  
Not as the ancient *Hero's* did,  
Who, that their base births might be hid,  
(Knowing they were of doubtful gender,  
And that they came in at a Windore)  
Made *Jupiter* himself and others  
O' th' Gods Gallants to their own Mothers,

( To get on them a Race of Champions,  
Of which old *Homer* first made *Lampoons* )  
*Archophylax* in Northern Sphere  
Was his undoubted Ancestor:  
From him his Great Forefathers came.  
And in all Ages bore his name.  
Learned he was in Medc'nal Lore,  
For by his side a Pouch he wore  
Replete with strange Hermetick Powder,  
That Wounds six miles point-blank would folder  
By skilful *Chymist* with great cost  
Extracted from a rotten Post;  
But of a heav'nlier influence  
Than that which Mountebanks dispense;  
Though by *Promothean* Fire made,  
As they do quack that drive that Trade.  
For as when Slovens do amiss  
At others doors by Stool or Piss,

The learned write, a Red-hot Spit,  
Bring prudently apply'd to it,  
Will convey mischief from the Dung  
Unto the part that did the wrong:  
So this did healing, and as sure  
As that did mischief, this would cure,

Thus vertuous *Orsin* was endu'd,  
With Learning, Conduct, Fortitude,  
Incomparable: and as the Prince  
Of Poets, *Homer*, sung long since,  
A skilful Leech is better far  
Than half a hundred Men of War;  
So he appear'd and by his skill,  
No less than Dint of Sword could kill.

The Gallant *Brui* marcht next him,  
With Visage formidably grim,

And

And rugged as a *Saracen*,  
Or *Turk* of *Mahomet's* own kin;  
Clad in a Mantle *della Guer*  
Of rough impenetrable Fur;  
And in his Nose, like *Indian King*,  
He wore for ornament a Ring;  
About his Neck a three-fold Gorget,  
As tough as trebled leathern Target;  
*Armed*, as *Heralds cant*, and *langued*,  
Or, as the *Vulgar* say, *sharp fanged*.  
For as the Teeth in Beasts of Prey  
Are Swords, with which they fight in Fray;  
So Swords, in Men of War are Teeth,  
Which they do eat their Vittle with.  
He was by birth, some Authors write,  
A *Russian*, some a *Muscovite*,  
And 'mong the *Cossacks* had been bred,  
Of whom we in *Diurnals* read,

That



That serve to fill up Pages here,  
As with their Bodies Ditches there.  
*Scrimansky* was his Cousin-german,  
With whom he serv'd, and fed on Vermin :  
And when these fail'd he'd suck his claws,  
And quarter himself upon his paws.  
And though his Countrey-men, the *Huns*,  
Did use to stew between their *Bums*,  
And their warm Horses backs, their meat  
And ev'ry man his Saddle eat :  
He was not half so nice as they,  
But eat it raw when't came in 's way.  
He had trac'd Countreys far and near,  
More than *Le Blanc* the Traveller ;  
Who writes, He Spous'd in *India*  
Of noble house a Lady gay,  
And got on her a Race of Worthies  
As stout as any upon Earth is

Full many a Fight for him between  
*Talgol* and *Orsin* oft had been;  
Each striving to deserve the Crown  
Of a fav'd Citizen: the one  
To guard his Bear, the other fought  
To aid his Dog; both made more stout  
By sev'ral spurs of neighborhood,  
*Church-fellow-membership*, and bloud  
But *Talgol*, mortal foe to Cows,  
Never got ought of him but blows;  
Blows hard and heavy, such as he  
Had lent, repayd with Usury.

Yet *Talgol* was of Courage stout,  
And vanquish'd oftner than he fought:  
Inur'd to labor, sweat, and toyl,  
And, like a Champion, shone with Oyl.

Right many a Widow his keen blade,  
And many a Fatherless, had made ;  
He many a *Bore* and huge *Dun Cow*  
Did, like another *Guy* o'rethrow.  
But *Guy* with him in fight compar'd,  
Had like the *Bore* or *Dun Cow* far'd,  
With greater Troops of Sheep h' had faught  
Than *Ajax* or bold *Don Quixot* :  
And many a Serpent of fell kind,  
With wings before and stings behind,  
Subdu'd ; as Poets say, long agoe  
Bold *Sir George*, *Saint George* did the *Dragon*.  
Nor Engine, nor Device Polemick,  
Disease, nor Doctor Epidemick,  
Though stor'd with Deletary Med'cines,  
(Which whosoever took is Dead since)  
E're sent so vast a Colony  
To both the under Worlds as he.

For he was of that noble Trade  
 That *Demi-gods* and *Hercules* made,  
 Slaughter, and knocking on the head,  
 The Trade to which they all were bred,  
 And is, like others, glorious when  
 'Tis great and large, but base if mean.  
 The former rides in Triumph for it;  
 The later in a two wheel'd Chariot,  
 For daring to prophane a thing  
 So Sacred, with vile bungling.

Next these brave the *Magnano* came,  
*Magnano* great in Martial Fame.  
 Yet when with *Orsin* he wag'd fight,  
 'Tis sung he got but little by't.  
 Yet he was fierce as *Forrest-Bore*,  
 Whose Spoils upon his Back he wore,

As thick as *Ajax* seven-fold Shield;  
Which o're his brazen Arms he held;  
But Brass was feeble to resist  
The fury of his armed fist;  
Nor could the hardest Ir'n hold out  
Against his blows, but they would through't

In *Magick* he was deeply read,  
As he that made the *Brazen-head*;  
Profoundly skill'd in the black Art,  
As *English Merlin* for his heart;  
But far more skilful in the Spheres  
Than he was at the Sieve and Shears.  
He could transform himself in Colour  
As like the Devil as a Collier;  
As like as Hypocrites in show  
Are to true Saints, or Crow to Crow.

Of warlike Engines he was Author,  
Devis'd for quick dispatch of slaughter:  
The Cannon, Blunderbuss, and Saker,  
He was th' inventor of and maker:  
The Trumpet and the Kettle-Drum  
Did both from his Invention come.  
He was the first that e'r did teach  
To make, and how to stop a breach.  
A Lance he bore with Iron pike,  
Th' one half would thrust, the other strike:  
And when their forces he had joyn'd,  
He scorn'd to turn his Parts behind.  
He Trulls lov'd, Trulls more bright  
Than burnish'd Armor of her Knight:  
A bold Virago, stout and tall  
As Joan of France, or English Mall.

Through



Through perils both of Wind and Limb,  
Through thick and thin she follow'd him,  
In ev'ry Adventure h' undertook,  
And never him or it forsook.  
At Breach of Wall, or Hedge surprize,  
She shar'd in th' hazard and the prize:  
At beating Quarters up, or Forrage,  
Behav'd her self with matchless courage,  
And laid about in fight more busily,  
Than th' *Amazonian* Dame, *Penthesile*.

And though some Criticks here cry shame,  
And say our Authors are to blame,  
That spight of all Philosophers,  
Who hold no Females stout, but Bears,  
And heretofore did so abhor  
Their Women should pretend to War,

They would not suffer the stout'st Dame  
To swear by *Hercules* his Name,  
Make feeble Ladies, in their Works,  
To fight like *Termagants* and *Turks*;  
To lay their native Arms aside,  
Their modesty, and ride a-stride;  
To run a-Tilt at Men, and wield  
Their naked tools in open field;  
As stout *Armida*, bold *Thalestris*,  
And she that would have been the Mistress  
Of *Gundibert*, but he had grace,  
And rather took a Countrey Lass:  
They say 'tis false, without all sense,  
But of pernicious consequence  
To Government, which they suppose  
Can never be upheld in Prose:  
Strip Nature naked to the skin,  
You'll find about her no such thing.

It may be so, yet what we tell  
Of *Trulla*, that's improbable,  
Shall be depos'd by those have seen't,  
Or, what's as good, produc'd in print:  
And if they will not take our word,  
We'll prove it true upon record,

The upright *Cerdon* next advanc't,  
Of all his Race the Valiant'st;  
*Cerdon* the Great, renown'd in Song,  
Like *Herc'les*, for repair of wrong:  
He rais'd the low, and fortify'd  
The weak against the strongest side.  
Ill has he read, that never hit  
On him in Muses deathless writ.  
He had a weapon keen and fierce,  
That through a Bull-hide shield would pierce,

And

And cut it in a thousand pieces,  
Though tougher than the Knight of *Greece* his;  
With whom his black thumb'd Ancestor  
Was Comrade in the ten years War:  
For when the restless *Greeks* set down  
So many years before *Troy* Town,  
And were renown'd, as *Homer* writes,  
For *well-sol'd Boots*, no less than Fights;  
They ow'd that Glory only to  
His Ancestor, that made them so.  
Fast friend he was to *Reformation*,  
Until 'twas worn quite out of fashion:  
Next Rectifier of *Wry Law*,  
And would make three, to cure one flaw:  
Learned he was, and could take note,  
Transcribe, Collect, Translate and Quote:  
But *Preaching* was his chiefest Talent,  
Or Argument, in which b'ing valiant;

He us'd to lay about and stickle,  
Like Ram or Bull, at *Conventicle*:  
For Disputants like *Rams* and *Bulls*,  
Do fight with *Arms* that spring from *Skulls*.

Last *Colon* came, bold man of War,  
Destin'd to blows by fatal Star;  
Right expert in Command of Horse,  
But cruel, and without remorse.  
That which of *Centaure* long ago  
Was said, and has been wrested to  
Some other Knights, was true of this,  
*He* and his *Horse* were of a piece.  
One Spirit did inform them both,  
The self-same Vigor, Fury Wroth:  
Yet he was much the rougher part,  
And always had a harder heart;

Although his Horſe had been of thoſe  
That fed on Man's fleſh, as Fame goes:  
Strange food for Horſe! and yet, alaſs,  
It may be true, for *Fleſh is Graſs*.  
Sturdy he was, and no leſs able  
Than *Hercules* to cleanſe a Stable;  
As great a Drover, and as great  
A Critick too in Hog or Neat.  
He ripp'd the Womb up of his Mother,  
Dame *Tellus*, 'cauſe ſhe wanted fother  
And Provender wherewith to feed  
Himſelf and his leſs-cruel Steed.  
It was a queſtion whether He  
Or 's Horſe were of a Family  
More Worſhipful: till Antiquaries,  
(After th'ad almoſt por'd out their Eies)  
Did very learnedly decide  
The buſineſs on the Horſe's ſide,



And prov'd not only Horse, but Cows,  
Nay Pigs, were of the elder house:  
For Beasts, when Man was but a piece  
Of earth himself, did th' earth possess.

These Worthies were the Chief that led  
The Combatants, each in the head,  
Of his Command, with Arms and Rage,  
Ready and longing to engage.

The numerous Rabble was drawn out  
Of several Countreys round about;  
From Villages remote, and Shires,  
Of East and Western Hemispheres:  
From forain Parishes and Regions,  
Of different Manners, Speech, Religions,  
Came Men and Mastives; some to fight  
For Fame and Honor, some for sight.

And now the field of Death, the lists,  
Were entred by Antagonists,  
And blood was ready to be broached;  
When *Hudibras* in haste approached,  
With Squire and Weapons to attack them:  
But first thus from his *Horse* bespake them.

What Rage, O Citizens, what fury  
Doth you to these dire actions hurry?  
What *Oestrum*, what phrenetick mood  
Makes you thus lavish of your blood,  
While the proud *Vies* your Trophies boast,  
And unreveng'd walks——ghost?

What Towns, what Garrisons might you  
With hazard of this blood subdue,  
Which now y' are bent to throw away  
In vain, untriumphable fray?

Shall *saints* in Civil bloudshed wallow  
Of *saints*, and let the *Cause* lie fallow?  
The *Cause* for which we fought and swore  
So boldly, shall we now give o're?  
Then because Quarrels still are seen  
With Oaths and Swearing to begin,  
The *Solemn League and Covenant*  
Will seem a meer *God-dam me* Rant;  
And we that took it, and have fought,  
As lewd as Drunkards that fall out.  
For as we make War *for the King*  
*Against himself*, the self-same thing  
Some will not stick to swear we do  
For *God* and for *Religion* too.  
For if *Bear-baiting* we allow,  
What good can *Reformation* do?  
The Bloud and Treasure that's laid out,  
Is thrown away, and goes for nought.

Are these the fruits o' th' *Protestation*,  
The Prototype of *Reformation*,  
Which all the *Saints*, and some, since *Martyrs*,  
Wore in their Hats, like Wedding-Garters,  
When 'twas resolv'd by either House  
*Six Members* quarrel to espouse?  
Did they for this draw down the Rabble,  
With zeal and noises formidable;  
And make all *Cries* about the Town  
Joyn throats to cry the *Bishops* down?  
Who having round begirt the Palace,  
(As once a month they do the *Gallows*)  
As *Members* gave the sign about,  
Set up their throats with hideous shout.  
When *Tinkers* bawl'd aloud, to settle  
*Church-Discipline*, for patching *Kettle*.  
No *Sow-gelder* did blow his Horn  
To geld a Cat, but cry'd *Reform*.

The

The *Oyster-women* lock'd their Fish up,

And trudg'd away to cry *No Bishop*.

The *Mousetrap-men* laid *Save-alls* by,

And 'gainst *Ev'l Counsellors* did cry.

*Botchers* left old *Cloaths* in the lurch,

And fell to turn and patch the *Church*.

Some cry'd the *Covenant* instead

Of *Pudding-pies* and *Ginger-bread* :

And some for *Broom*, old *Boots* and *Shoes*.

Baul'd out to purge the *Common's House* :

Instead of *Kitchinstuff*, some cry

A *Gospel-preaching-Ministry* ;

And some for *Old Suits*, *Coats*, or *Cloak*,

No *Surplices*, nor *Service-book*.

A strange harmonious inclination

Of all degrees to *Reformation*.

And is this all? is this the end

To which these *carr'ings* on did tend?

Hath *Publick Faith* like a young heir  
For this tak'n up all sorts of Ware,  
And run int' ev'ry Tradesman's book,  
Till both turn'd Bankrupts, and are broke?  
Did *Saints* for this bring in the *Plate*,  
And crowd as if they came too late?  
For when they thought the *Cause* had need on't,  
Happy was he that could be rid on't.  
Did they coyn *Pifs pots*, *Bowls*, and *Flaggons*,  
Int' Officers of Horse and Dragoons;  
And into Pikes and Musqueteers  
Stamp *Beakers*, *Cups*, and *Porringers*?  
A *Thimble*, *Bodkin*, and a *Spoon*  
Did start up living men, as soon  
As in the Furnace they were thrown,  
Just like the *Dragon's teeth* b'ing sown.  
Then was the *Cause* all Gold and Plate,  
The *Brethrens* off'rings, consecrate

Like



Like th' *Hebrew-calf*, and down before it  
The *Saints* fell prostrate, to adore it.  
So say the *Wicked*--and will you  
Make that *Sarcasmous Scandal* true.  
By running after *Dogs* and *Bears*,  
Beasts more unclean than *Calves* or *Steers*?  
Have *pow'rful Preachers* ply'd their tongues,  
And *laid* themselves out and their *Lungs*;  
Us'd all means, both direct and sinister,  
I' th' power of *Gospel-Preaching Minister*?  
Have they invented *Tones*, to win  
The *Women*, and make them draw in  
The *Men*, as *Indians* with a *Female*  
Tame *Elephant* enveigle the *Male*?  
Have they told *Prov'dence* what it must do,  
Whom to avoid, and whom to trust to?  
Discover'd th' *Enemy's* design,  
And which way best to countermine;

Prescrib'd what ways he hath to work,  
Or it will ne'r advance the *Kirk*;  
Told it the *News* o'th' last express,  
And after good or bad success  
Made Prayers, not so like *Petitions*,  
As *Overtures* and *Propositions*,  
(Such as the *Army* did present  
To their Creator th' *Parliament*)  
In which they freely will 'confess,  
They will not, cannot *acquiesce*,  
Unless the *Work* be carry'd on  
In the same way they have begun,  
By setting Church and Common-weal,  
All on a flame bright as their zeal,  
On which the Saints were all-a-gog,  
And all this for a *Bear* and *Dog*?

The

The Parliament drew up *Petitions*  
 To 't self, and sent them, like *Commissions*,  
 To *Well-affected* Persons down,  
 In ev'ry City and great Town;  
 With pow'r to leavy Horse and Men,  
 Only to bring them back agen:  
 For this did many, many a mile,  
 Ride manfully in Rank and File,  
 With *Papers* in their Hats, that show'd  
 As if they to the *Pillory* rode.  
 Have all these courses, these efforts,  
 Been try'd by people of all sorts,  
*Velis & Remis, omnibus Nervis*,  
 And all t' advance the *Cause's* service:  
 And shall all now be thrown away  
 In petulant intestine fray?  
 Shall we that in the *Cov'nant* swore,  
 Each man of us to run before

Another

Another still in *Reformation*,  
 Give *Dogs* and *Bears* a Dispensation?  
 How will *dissenting Brethren* relish it?  
 What will *Malignants* say? *Videlicet*,  
 That each man swore to do his best,  
 To damn and perjure all the rest:  
 And bid the *Devil* take the *hinmost*,  
 Which at this *Race* is like to win most.  
 They 'l say our bus'ness to *reform*  
 The Church and State is but a *worm*:  
 For to subscribe, unsight unseen,  
 T' an unknown Churches Discipline  
 What is it else, but before-hand,  
 T' ingage, and after understand?  
 For when we swore to carry on  
 The present *Reformation*,  
 According to the Purest mode  
 Of Churches, best Reform'd abroad,

What

What did we else but make a vow  
To do we know not what, nor how?  
For no three of us will agree  
Where, or what Churches these should be.  
And is indeed the self-same case  
With theirs that swore *Et ceteras*;  
Or the *French League*, in which men vow'd  
To fight to the last drop of blood.  
These slanders will be thrown upon  
The *Cause* and *Work* we carry on,  
If we permit men to run headlong  
T' exorbitancies fit for *Bedlam*,  
Rather than *Gospel-walking* times,  
Whan slightest Sins are gteatest Crimes.  
But we the matter so shall handle,  
As to remove that odious scandal.  
*In name of King and Parliament,*  
I charge ye all, no more soment

This feud, but keep the peace between  
Your Brethren and your Countrey-men;  
And to those places straight repair  
Where your respective dwellings are.  
But to that purpose first surrender,  
The *Fidler*, as the prime offender,  
Th' Incendiary vile, that is chief  
Author and Enginier of mischief;  
That makes division between friends,  
For prothane and malignant ends.  
He and that Engine of vile noise,  
On which illegally he plays,  
Shall (*dictum factum*) both he brought  
To condigne Punishment as th'y ought.  
This must be done, and I would fain see:  
Mortal so sturdy as to gain-say:  
For then I'll take another course,  
And soon Reduce you a'll by force.



What did we else but make a vow  
To do we know not what, nor how?  
For no three of us will agree  
Where, or what Churches\* these should be.  
And is indeed the self-same case  
With theirs that swore *Et ceteras*;  
Or the *French League*, in which men vow'd  
To fight to the last drop of blood.  
These slanders will be thrown upon  
The *Cause* and *Work* we carry on,  
If we permit men to run headlong  
T' exorbitancies fit for *Bedlam*,  
Rather than *Gospel-walking* times,  
Whan slightest Sins are gteatest Crimes.  
But we the matter so shall handle,  
As to remove that odious scandal.  
*In name of King and Parliament,*  
I charge ye all, no more soment

This feud, but keep the peace between  
Your Brethren and your Countrey-men;  
And to those places straight repair  
Where your respective dwellings are.  
But to that purpose first surrender,  
The *Fidler*, as the prime offender,  
Th' Incendiary vile, that is chief  
Author and Enginier of mischief;  
That makes division between friends,  
For prothane and malignant ends.  
He and that Engine of vile noise,  
On which illegally he plays,  
Shall (*dictum factum*) both he brought  
To condigne Punishment as th'y ought.  
This must be done, and I would fain see:  
Mortal so sturdy as to gain-say:  
For then I'll take another course,  
And soon Reduce you a'l by force.

This said, he clapt his hand on Sword,  
To shew he meant to keep his word.

But *Talgol*, who had long suppress'd  
Enflamed wrath in glowing breast,  
Which now began to rage and burn as  
Implacably as flame in furnace,  
Thus answer'd him. Thou Vermin wretched,  
As e're in Meazel'd Pork was hatched ;  
Thou Tail of Worship, that dost grow  
On Rump of Justice as of Cow ;  
How dar'st thou with that sullen Luggage  
O'th thy self, old Ir'n and other Baggage,  
With which thy Steed of Bones and Leather  
Has broke his Wind in halting hither ;  
How durst th', I say, adventure thus  
T' oppose thy Lumber against us ?

Could

Could thine Impertinence find out  
 No work t' employ it self about,  
 Where thou secure from Wooden blow  
 Thy busy vanity might'st show?  
 Was no dispute afoot between  
 The *Cattermauling Brethren*?  
 No subtle Question rais'd among  
 Those *out-o'-their wits* and those i' th' wrong?  
 No prize between those Combatans  
 O' th' times, the Land and Water-Saints;  
 Where thou might'st *stickle without hazard*  
 Of outrage to thy hide and mazzard,  
 And not for want of bus'ness come  
 To us to be thus troublesome,  
 To interrupt our better sort  
 Of Disputants, and spoil our sport?  
 Was there no Felony, no Bawd,  
 Cut-purse, nor Burglary abroad?

No *Stolen Pig*, nor *Plunder'd Goose*,  
To tie thee up from breaking loose ?  
No Ale unlicenc'd, broken hedge,  
For which thou Statute mightst alledge,  
To keep thee busie from foul evil,  
And shame due to thee from the Devil ?  
Did no Committee sit, where he  
Might cut out journey-work for thee ;  
And set th' a task, with subornation,  
To stitch up *sule* and *sequestration* ;  
To cheat with *Holiness* and *Zeal*  
All Parties, and the Common-weal ?  
Much better had it been for thee,  
H' had kept thee where th'art us'd to be ;  
Or sent th' on bus'ness any whither,  
So he had never brought thee hither.  
But if th' hast Brain enough in Skull  
To keep within it's lodging whole,

And

And not provoke the rage of Stones  
And Cudgels to thy Hide and Bones;  
Tremble, and vanish while thou may'st,  
Which I'll not promise if thou stay'st.  
At this the Knight grew high in wroth,  
And *lifting bands* and *eyes up* both,  
Three times smote on stomach stout,  
From whence at length these words broke out,  
Was I for this entit'led Sir,  
And girt with trusty Sword and Spur,  
For Fame and Honor to wage Battel,  
Thus to be brav'd by Foe to Cattel?  
Not all that Pride that makes thee swell  
As big as thou dost blown up Veal;  
Nor all thy tricks and flights to cheat,  
And sell thy Carrion for good meat;  
Not all thy Magick to repair  
Decay'd old age in tough lean ware,



Make Natural Death appear thy work,  
And stop the Gangreen in stale Pork;  
Not all that force that makes thee proud,  
Because by Bullock ne'r withstood;  
Though arm'd with all thy Clevers, Knives,  
And Axes made to hew down lives;  
Shall save or help thee to evade  
The hand of Justice, or this blade  
Which I her Sword-bearer do carry,  
For civil Deed and Military.  
Nor shall these words of Venom base,  
Which thou hast from their native place,  
Thy stomach, pump'd to sling on me,  
Go unreveng'd, though I am free.  
Thou down the same throat shalt devour 'em,  
Like tainted Beef, and pay dear for 'em.  
Nor shall it e're be said, that weight  
With Cantlet blew and Bases white;

And round blunt Dudgeon by his side,  
So great a man at Arms defy'd  
With words far bitterer than Wormwood,  
That would in *Job* or *Grizel* stir mood.  
Dogs with their Tongues their wounds do heal;  
But Men with hands, as thou shalt feel.  
This said, with hasty rage he snatch'd;  
His Gun-shot, that in holsters watch'd;  
And bending Cock, he level'd full  
Against th' outside of *Talgol's* Skull;  
Vowing that he should ne'r stir further,  
Nor henceforth Cow or Bullock murder.  
But *Pallas* came in shape of Rust,  
And 'twixt the Spring and Hammer thrust  
Her *Gorgon*-shield, which made the Cock  
Stand stiff as if 'twere turn'd t' a stock.  
Mean while fierce *Talgol* gath'ring might,  
With rugged Truncheon charg'd the Knight.

And he his rusty Pistol held  
To take the blow on, like a Shield;  
The Gun recoyl'd, as well it might,  
Not us'd to such a kind of fight,  
And thrunk from its great Master's gripe,  
Knock'd down and stunn'd with mortal stripe:  
Than *Hudibras* with furious haste  
Drew out his sword; yet not so fast,  
But *Talgol* first with hardy thwack  
Twice bruise'd his head, and twice his back.  
But when his nut-brown Sword was out,  
Couragiously he laid about,  
Imprinting many a wound upon  
His mortal foe the Truncheon.  
The trusty Cudgel did oppose  
It self against dead-doing blows,  
To guard its Leader from fell bane,  
And then reveng'd it self again.

And though the sword (some understood)   
 In force had much the odds of Wood;   
 'Twas nothing so, both sides were ballanc't   
 So equal, none knew which was vallant   
 For Wood with Honor b'ing engag'd;   
 Is so implacably enrag'd,   
 Though Iron hew and mangle sore,   
 Wood wounds and bruises Honor more.   
 And now both knights were out of breath;   
 Tir'd in the hot pursuit of Death;   
 While all the rest amaz'd stood still,   
 Expecting which would take, or kill.   
 This *Hudibras* observ'd, and fretting   
 Conquest should be so long a getting,   
 He drew up all his force into   
 One Body, and that into one Blow.   
 But *Talgol* wisely avoided it   
 By cunning flight; for had it hit,

The

The Upper part of him the Blow  
Had slit, as sure as that below.

Mean while th' incomparable *Colon*,  
To aid his Friend began to fall on,  
Him *Ralph* encountred, and straight grew  
A fierce Dispute betwixt them two:  
Th' one arm'd with Metal, th' other with Wodd;  
This fit for bruise, and that for bloud.  
With many a stiff thwack, many a bang,  
Hard Crab-tree and old Iron rang;  
While none that saw them could divine  
To which side Conquest would incline:  
Untill *Magnano*, who did envy  
That two should with so many men vye,  
By subtle stratagem of brain  
Perform'd what force could ne'r attain,

For he, by foul hap having found  
Where Thistles grew on barren ground,  
In haste he drew his weapon out  
And having crop'd them from the Root  
He clapp'd them under th' Horses Tail  
With prickles sharper than a Nail  
The angry Beast did straight resent  
The wrong done to his Fundament,  
Begun to kick, and fling, and wince,  
As if h' had been beside his sense,  
Striving to disingage from Smart,  
And raging Pain, th' afflicted Part ;  
Instead of which he threw the pack  
Of *squire* and Baggage from his back ;  
And blundring still with smarting rump,  
He gave the Champions Steed a thump,  
That staggar'd him. The *Knight* did stoop  
And sate on further side aloope.

This



This *Talgol* viewing, who had now  
By flight escap'd the fatal blow,  
He rally'd, and again fell to't;  
For catching him by nearer foot,  
He lifted with such might and strength,  
As would have hurl'd him thrice his length,  
And dash'd his brains (if any) out.  
But *Mars* that still protects the stout,  
In Pudding-time came to his aid,  
And under him the *Bear* convey'd;  
The *Bear*, upon whose soft Fur-Gown  
The *Knight* with all his weight fell down,  
The friendly Rug preserv'd the ground,  
And headlong *Knight* from bruise or wound,  
Like Feather-bed betwixt a Wall,  
And heavy brunt of Cannon-ball.  
As *Sancho* on a Blanket fell,  
And had no hurt; ours far'd as well

In body, though his mighty Spirit,  
 Being heavy, did not so well bear it.  
 The Bear was in a greater fright,  
 Beat down and worsted by the Knight.  
 He roar'd, and rag'd, and flung about,  
 To shake off bondage from his mouth.  
 His wrath inflam'd boil'd o'r, and from  
 His jaws of Death he threw the fume.  
 Fury in stranger postures threw him,  
 And more, than ever Herald drew him.  
 He tore the Earth, which he had sav'd  
 From squelch of Knight, and storm'd and rav'd;  
 And vex'd the more, because the harms  
 He felt were 'gainst the *Law of Arms*:  
 For Men he always took to be  
 His friends, and Dogs the Enemy:  
 Who never so much hurt had done him,  
 As his own side did falling on him.

It griev'd him to the Guts, that they  
 For whom h'had faught so many a fray,  
 And serv'd with loss of blood so long,  
 Should offer such inhumane wrong;  
 Wrong of unsouldier-like condition:  
 For which he flung down his Commission,  
 And laid about him, till his Nose  
 From thrall of Ring and Cord broke loose.  
 Soon as he felt himself enlarg'd,  
 Through thickest of his foes he charg'd,  
 And made way through th' amazed crew,  
 Some he o're-ran, and some o're threw.  
 But took none; for by hasty flight  
 He strove t' avoid the conquering *Knight*,  
 From whom he fled with as much haste  
 And dread as he the Rabble chac'd.  
 In haste he fled, and so did they,  
 Each and his fear a sev'ral way.

*Crowdero* only kept the field,  
Not stirring from the place he held,  
Though beaten down and wounded sore  
T' th' Fiddle, and a Leg that bore  
One side of him, not that of bone,  
But much its betters, th' wooden one.  
He spying *Hudibras* lye strow'd  
Upon the ground, like log of wood,  
With fright of fall supposed wound,  
And loss of Urine, in a swoond,  
In haste he snatch'd the wooden limb  
That hurt in th' ankle lay by him,  
And fitting it for sudden fight,  
Straight drew it up, t' attack the *Knight*.  
For getting up on stump and huckle,  
He with the foe began to buckle,

Vowing to be reveng'd for breach  
Of Crowd and Shin upon the wretch,  
Sole author of all Detriment  
He and his Fiddle underwent.  
But *Ralpho* (who had now begun  
T' adventure resurrection  
From heavy squelch, and had got up  
Upon his Legs with sprained Crup)  
Looking about beheld the Bard  
To charge the *Knight* intranc'd prepar'd,  
He snatch'd his Whiniard up, that fled  
When he was falling off his Steed,  
(As Rats do from a falling house,)  
To hide it self from rage of blows;  
And wing'd with speed and fury, flew  
To rescue *Knight* from black and blew.  
Which e're he could atchieve, his Sconce  
The Leg encounter'd twice and once ;

And now 'twas rais'd, to smite agen,  
When *Ralpho* thrust himself between.  
He took the blow upon his Arm,  
To shield the *Knight* from further harm,  
And joyning wrath with force, bestow'd  
On th' wooden member such a load,  
That down it fell, and with it bore  
*Crowdero*, whom it propp'd before.  
To him the *Squire* right nimbly run,  
And setting his bold foot upon  
His trunk, thus spoke: What *desp'rate Frenzie*  
Made thee, (thou whelp of Sin) to fancy  
Thy self and all that Coward Rabble  
T' encounter us in battle able?  
How durst th', I say, oppose thy Curship  
Gainst Arms, Authority and Worship?  
And *Hudibras*, or me provoke,  
Though all thy Limbs were heart of Oke,

And

H

And



And th' other half of thee as good  
To bear out blows as that of Wood?  
Could not the whipping-post prevail  
With all its Rhet'rick, nor the Gaol,  
To keep from flaying scourge thy skin,  
And ankle free from Iron Gin?  
Which now thou shalt——but first our care  
Must see how *Hudibras* doth fair.  
This said, he gently rais'd the *Knight*,  
And set him on his Bum upright:  
To rouse him from Lethargick dump,  
He tweak'd his Nose with gentle thump,  
Knock'd on his breast, as if 't had been  
To raise the Spirits lodg'd within.  
They wakened with the noise, did fly  
From inward Room to Window eye,  
And gently op'ning lid, the Casement,  
Lookt out, but yet with some amazement.

This gladdened *Ralpho* much to see,  
Who thus bespoke the *Knight*: quoth he,  
Tweaking his noife, You are, great Sir,  
A *Self-denying* Conqueror;  
As high, victorious and great,  
As e'r fought for the Churches yet,  
If you will give your self but leave  
To make out what y' already have;  
That's Victory, the foe, for dread  
Of your Nine-worthiness, is fled,  
All save *Crowdero*, for whose sake  
You did th' espous'd Cause undertake:  
And he lies pris'ner at your feet,  
To be dispos'd as you think meet,  
Either for Life, or Death, or Sale,  
The Gallows, or perpetual Jayl.  
For one wink of your pow'ful Eye  
Must sentence him to live, or dye.

His Fiddle is your proper purchase,  
 Won in the Service of the Churches;  
 And by your doom must be allow'd  
 To be, or be no more, a *Crowd*.  
 For though success did not confer  
 Just Title on the Conquerer;  
 Though *dispensations* were not strong  
 Conclusions whether right or wrong;  
 Although *Out goings* did not confirm,  
 And *Owning* were but a meer term:  
 Yet as the *wicked* have no right  
 To th' Creature, though usurp'd by might,  
 The property is in the Saint,  
 From whom th' injuriously detain't;  
 Of him they hold their *Luxuries*,  
 Their Dogs, their Horses, Whores and Dice,  
 Their Riots, Revels, Masks, Delights,  
 Pimps, Buffoons, Fiddlers, Parasites:

All which the *Saints* have *Title* to,  
And ought t' enjoy, if th' had their due.  
What we take from them is no more  
Than what was ours by right before.  
For we are their true *Landlords* still,  
And they our *Tenants* but at will.

At this the *Knight* begun to rouse,  
And by degrees grow valorous.  
He star'd about, and seeing none  
Of all his foes remain but one,  
He snatch'd his weapon that lay near him,  
And from the ground began to rear him;  
Vowing to make *Cromdero* pay  
For all the rest that ran away.  
But *Ralpho* now in colder blood,  
His fury mildly thus withstood:

Great Sir, quoth he, your mighty Spirit  
Is rais'd too high, this Slave does merit  
To be the Hangman's bus'ness, sooner  
Than from your hand to have the honor  
Of his destruction. I that am  
So much below in Deed and Name,  
Did scorn to hurt his forfeit Carcass,  
Or ill intreat his Fiddle or Case.  
Will you, Great Sir, that Glory blot  
In cold blood, which you gain'd in hot?  
Will you employ your Conqu'ring Sword,  
To break a Fiddle and your Word?  
For though I fought, and overcame,  
And quarter gave, 'twas in your name.  
For great Commanders always own  
What's prosperous by the Soldier done,  
To save, where you have pow'r to kill,  
Argues your Pow'r above your Will;

And that your Will and Pow'r have less  
Than both might have of selfishness.  
This Pow'r which now alive with dread  
He trembles at, if he were dead,  
Would no more keep the slave in awe  
Than if you were a Knight of Straw:  
For death would then be his Conqueror,  
Not you, and free him from that terror.  
If danger from his life accrue,  
Or honor from his death to you;  
'Twere Policy, and Honor too,  
To do as you resolv'd to do,  
But, Sir, 'twould wrong your valour much,  
To say it needs or fears a Crutch.  
Great Conquerors greater glory gain  
By Foes in Triumph led, than slain:  
The Lawrels that adorn their brows  
Are pull'd from living, not dead boughs,



Great Sir, quoth he, your mighty Spirit  
Is rais'd too high, this Slave does merit  
To be the Hangman's bus'ness, sooner  
Than from your hand to have the honor  
Of his destruction. I that am  
So much below in Deed and Name,  
Did scorn to hurt his forfeit Carcass,  
Or ill intreat his Fiddle or Case.  
Will you, Great Sir, that Glory blot  
In cold blood, which you gain'd in hot?  
Will you employ your Conqu'ring Sword,  
To break a Fiddle and your Word?  
For though I fought, and overcame,  
And quarter gave, 'twas in your name.  
For great Commanders always own  
What's prosperous by the Soldier done.  
To save, where you have pow'r to kill,  
Argues your Pow'r above your Will;

And that your Will and Pow'r have less  
Than both might have of selfishness.  
This Pow'r which now alive with dread  
He trembles at, if he were dead,  
Would no more keep the slave in awe  
Than if you were a Knight of Straw:  
For death would then be his Conqueror,  
Not you, and free him from that terror.  
If danger from his life accrue,  
Or honor from his death to you;  
'Twere Policy, and Honor too,  
To do as you resolv'd to do,  
But, Sir, 'twould wrong your valour much,  
To say it needs or fears a Crutch.  
Great Conquerors greater glory gain  
By Foes in Triumph led, than slain:  
The Lawrels that adorn their brows  
Are pull'd from living, not dead boughs,

And living foes the greatest fame  
Of Cripple slain can be but lame.  
One half of him's already slain,  
The other is not worth your pain.  
Th' Honor can but on one side lighr,  
As Worship did, when y' were dub'd *Knight*.  
Wherefore I think it better far,  
To keep him Prisoner of War;  
And let him fast in bonds abide,  
At *Court of Justice* to be try'd:  
Where if h' appear so bold or crafty,  
There may be danger in his safety;  
If any Member there dislike  
His Face, or to his Beard have pike;  
Or if his death will save, or yield,  
Revenge, or fright, it is *reveal'd*,  
Though he has quarter, ne'rtheless  
Y' have pow'r to hang him when you please.

This hath been often done by some  
Of our great Conquerors, you know whom:  
And has by most of us been held  
Wise Justice, and to some *reveal'd*.  
For Words and Promises that yoke  
The Conqueror, are quickly broke,  
Like *sampson's* Cuffs, though by his own  
Direction and advice put on.  
For if we should fight for the *Cause*  
By rules of military Laws,  
And only do what they call just,  
The *Cause* would quickly fall to dust.  
This we among our selves may speak,  
But to the *Wicked* or the *Weak*  
We must be cautious to declare  
*Perfection-truths*, such as these are.

This

This said, the high outrageous mettle  
Of *Knight* began to cool and settle.  
He lik'd the *Squire's* advice, and soon  
Resolv'd to see the bus'ness done :  
And therefore charg'd him first to bind  
*Crowdero's* hands on rump behind,  
And to its former place and use  
The Wooden member to reduce :  
But force it take an *Oath* before,  
*Ne'r to bear Arms* against him more.

*Ralpho* dispatch'd with speedy haste,  
And having ty'd *Crowdero* fast,  
He gave Sir *Knight* the end of Cord,  
To lead the Captive of his sword  
In triumph while the Steeds he caught,  
And them to further service brought.

The *Squire* in state rode on before,  
And on his nut-brown Whiniard bore  
The *Trophee-Fiddle* and the *Cafe*,  
Plac'd on his shoulder like a Mace.  
The *Knight* himself did after ride,  
Leading *Crowdero* by his side,  
And tow'd him, if he lagg'd behind,  
Like Boat against the Tide and Wind.  
Thus grave and solemn they march on,  
Until quite through the Town th' had gone  
At further end of which their stands  
An ancient Castle, that commands  
Th' adjacent parts; in all the fabrick,  
You shall not see one stone nor a brick,  
But all of Wood, by powr'ful Spell  
Of Magick made impregnable;  
There's neither Iron-bar, nor Gate,  
Port-cullis, Chain, nor Bolt, not Grate:

And



And yet men durance there abide,  
In Dungeon scarce three inches wide ; i  
With Roof so low, that under it  
They never stand, but lye, or sit ;  
And yet so foul, that who so is in,  
Is to the middle-leg in prison,  
In Circle Magical confin'd,  
With Walls of subtle Air and Wind,  
Which none are able to break thorough,  
Until th' are freed by head of Borough.  
Thither arriv'd th' advent'rous *Knight*  
And bold *Squire* from their Steeds alight,  
At th' outward Wall, near which there stands  
A Bastile, built t' imprison hands ;  
By strange enchantment made to fetter  
The lesser parts, and free the greater.  
For though the Body may creep through,  
The Hands in Grate are fast enough.

And

And when a Circle 'bout the Wrist  
made by Beadle Exorcist,  
The Body feels the Spur and Switch,  
As if 'twere ridden Post by 'Witch  
At twenty miles an hour pace,  
And yet ne'r stirs out of the place.  
On top of this there is a Spire,  
On which Sir *Knight* first bids the *Squire*  
The *Fiddle*, and its Spoils, the *Case*,  
In manner of a Trophee, place.  
That done, they ope the Trap-dore-gate,  
And let *Crowdero* down thereat.  
*Crowd ro* making doleful face,  
Like Hermit poor in pensive place,  
To Dungeon they the wretch commit,  
And the survivor of his feet :  
But th' other that had broke the peace,  
And head of Knighthood, they release,

Though

Though a *Delinquent* false and forged,  
Yet b'ing a stranger, he's enlarged ;  
While his Comrade that did no hurt,  
Is clapt up fast in prison for't.

*So Justice, while she winks at Crimes,  
Stumbles on Innocence sometimes.*

---

THE

The ARGUMENT of  
The THIRD CANTO.

*The scatter'd Rout return and rally,  
Surround the Place; the Knight does sally,  
And is made Pris'ner: then they seize  
Th' Inchanted Fort by storm, release  
Crowdero, and put the Squire in's place.  
I should have first said, Hudibras.*

CANTO III.

**A**Y me what perils do environ  
The man that medles with cold Iron!  
What plaguy mischiefs and mishaps  
Do dog him still with after-claps!  
For though Dame Fortune seem to smile  
And leer upon him for a while;

She'l

She'l after shew him, in the nick  
Of all his Glories, a Dog-trick.  
This any man may sing or say  
I' th' Ditty call'd, *What if a Day*.  
For *Hudibras*, who thought h' had won  
The Field as certain as a Gun,  
And having routed the whole Troop,  
With Victory was Cock-a-hoop ;  
Think h' had done enough to purchase  
*Thanksgiving-day* among the *Churches*,  
Wherein his Mettle and brave Worth  
Might be explain'd by *Holder-forth*,  
And Register'd by Fame eternal,  
In Deathless Pages of *Diurnal* ;  
Found in few minutes to his Cost,  
He did but *Count without his Host* ;  
And that a *Turn-stile* is more certain,  
Than in events of War Dame Fortune.

For now the late faint-hearted Rout  
O'rethrown and scatter'd round about,  
Chac'd by the horror of their fear  
From bloody fray of *Knight* and *Bear*,  
(All but the *Dogs* who in pursuit,  
Of the *Knight's* victory stood to't,  
And most ignobly fought to get  
The Honor of his blood and sweat )  
Seeing the coast was free and clear  
O' th' Conquer'd and the Conquerer,  
Took heart again, and fac'd about,  
As if they meant to stand it out :  
For now the half-defeated *Bear*  
Attack'd by th' Enemy i' th' rear,  
Finding their number grew too great  
For him to make a safe retreat,



Like a bold Chieftain fac'd about ;  
But wisely doubting to hold out,  
Gave way to fortune, and with haste  
Fac'd the proud foe, and fled, and fac'd,  
Retiring still, until he found  
H' had got th' advantage of the Ground ;  
And then as valiantly made head,  
To check the foe, and forthwith fled ;  
Leaving no Art untry'd, nor Trick  
Of Warrior stout and Polytick.  
Until in spight of hot pursuit,  
He gain'd a Pass, to hold dispute  
On better terms, and stop the course  
Of the proud foe. With all his force  
He bravely charg'd, and for a while  
Forc'd their whole Body to recoil :  
But still their numbers so increast  
He found himself at length oppress,

And all evasions so uncertain.  
To save himself for better fortune,  
That he resolv'd, rather than yield,  
To die with honor in the field,  
And sell his Hide and Carcass at  
A price as high and desperate  
As e're he could. This Resolution  
He forthwith put in execution,  
And bravely threw himself among  
The Enemy i' th' greatest throng.  
But what could single Valour do  
Against so numerous a foe ?  
Yet much he did, indeed too much  
To be believ'd, where th' odds was such :  
But one against a multitude,  
As more than mortal can make good.  
For while one party he oppos'd,  
His Rear was suddainly enclos'd,

And no room left him for retreat,  
Or fight against a foe so great.  
For now the Mastives charging home  
To blows and handy-gripes were come;  
While manfully himself he bore,  
And setting his right-foot before,  
He rais'd himself, to shew how tall  
His Person was, above them all.  
This equal shame and envy stirr'd  
In th' enemy, that one should beard  
So many Warriors and so stout  
As he had done, and stand it out,  
Disdaining to lay down his Arms,  
And yield on honourable terms.  
Enraged thus some in the rear  
Attack'd him, and some ev'ry where  
Till down he fell, yet falling fought,  
And being down still laid about;

As *Widdrington* in doleful dumps  
Is said to fight upon his stumps.

But all, alas! had been in vain,  
And he inevitably slain,

If *Trulla* and *Cerdon* in the nick  
To rescue him had not been quick.

For *Trulla*, who was light of foot,  
As shafts which long-field *Parthians* shoot

( But not so light as to be born  
Upon the Ears of standing Corn,

Or tript it o're the Water quicker

Than Witches when their staves they liquor,

As some report ) was got among

The foremost of the Martial throng;

Where pitting the vanquish'd *Bear*,

She call'd to *Cerdon*, who stood near

And no room left him for retreat,  
Or fight against a foe so great.  
For now the Mastives charging home  
To blows and handy-gripes were come;  
While manfully himself he bore,  
And setting his right-foot before,  
He rais'd himself, to shew how tall  
His Person was, above them all.  
This equal shame and envy stirr'd  
In th' enemy, that one should beard  
So many Warriors and so stout  
As he had done, and stand it out,  
Disdaining to lay down his Arms,  
And yield on honourable terms.  
Enraged thus some in the rear  
Attack'd him, and some ev'ry where  
Till down he fell, yet falling fought,  
And being down still laid about;

As *Widdrington* in doleful dumps  
Is said to fight upon his stumps.

But all, alas! had been in vain,  
And he inevitably slain,  
If *Trulla* and *Cerdon* in the nick  
To rescue him had not been quick.  
For *Trulla*, who was light of foot,  
As shafts which long-field *Parthians* shoot  
( But not so light as to be born  
Upon the Ears of standing Corn,  
Or tript it o're the Water quicker  
Than Witches when their staves they liquor,  
As some report ) was got among  
The foremost of the Martial throng;  
Where pitying the vanquish'd *Bear*,  
She call'd to *Cerdon*, who stood near



Viewing the bloody fight, to whom  
Shall we (quoth she) stand still *hum drum*,  
And see stout *Bruin* all alone  
By numbers basely overthrown?  
Such feats already h' has atchiev'd,  
In story not to be believ'd:  
And 't would to us be shame enough,  
Not to attempt to fetch him off.

I would (quoth he) venture a Limb  
To second thee, and rescue him:  
But then we must about it straight,  
Or else our aid will come too late,  
Quarter he scorns, he is so stout,  
And therefore cannot long hold out.  
This said they wav'd their weapons round  
About their heads, to clear the ground;

And joyning forces laid about  
So fiercely, that th' amazed rout  
Turn'd tail again, and straight begun,  
As if *the Devil drove*, to run.  
Meanwhile th' approach'd the place where *Bruin*  
Was now engag'd to mortal ruine :  
The conquering foe they soon assail'd ;  
First *Trulla* stav'd, and *Cerdon* tail'd,  
Until their Mastives loos'd their hold :  
And yet, alas ! do what they could,  
The worsted *Bear* came off with store  
Of bloody wounds, but all before.  
For as *Achilles* dipt in Pond,  
Was *Anabaptiz'd* free from wound,  
Made proof against deed-doing steel  
All over but the Pagan heel :  
So did our Champion's Arms defend  
All of him but the other end,

His Head and Ears, which in the Martial  
Encounter lost a Leathern parcel,  
For as an *Austrian Archduke* once  
Had one ear ( which in *Ducatoons*  
Is half the Coyn ) in Battel par'd  
Close to his head; so *Bruin* far'd:  
But rugg'd and pull'd on th' other side,  
Like *scrivener* newly crucify'd;  
Or like the late-corrected Leathern  
Ears of the *circumcised Brethren*.  
But gentle *Trulla* into th' Ring  
He wore in's Nose convey'd a string,  
With which she marcht before, and led  
The Warrior to a grassy Bed,  
As Authors write, in a cool shade,  
Which *Eglentine* and *Roses* made,  
Close by a softly-murm'ring stream  
Where Lovers us'd to loll and dream.

There

There leaving him to his repose,  
Secured from pursuit of foes,  
And wanting nothing but a Song,  
And a well-tun'd *Theorbo* hung  
Upon a Bough, to ease the pain  
His tugg'd ears suffer'd, with a strain,  
They both drew up, to march in quest  
Of his great Leader, and the rest.

For *Orsin* ( who was more renown'd  
For stout maintaining of his ground  
In standing fights than for pursuit,  
As being not so quick of foot )  
Was not long able to keep pace  
With others that pursu'd the Chace,  
But found himself left far behind,  
Both out of heart and out of wind;

Griev'd

Griev'd to behold his *Bear* pursu'd  
So basely by a multitude,  
And like to fall, not by the prowess,  
But numbers of his Coward foes,  
He rag'd and kept as heavy a coil as  
Stout *Hercules* for loss of *Hylas*,  
Forcing the Vallies to repeat  
The Accents of his sad regret.  
He beat his Breast, and tore his Hair,  
For loss of his dear Crony *Bear* :  
That Eccho from the hollow ground  
His doleful wailings did resound  
More wistfully, by many times,  
Than in small Poets splay-foot times,  
That make her, in their ruthless stories,  
To answer to Inter'gatories,  
And most unconscionably depose  
To things of which she nothing knows :

And

And when she has said all she can say,  
 'Tis wrested to the Lover's fancy.

Quoth he, O whether, wicked *Bruin*,  
 Art thou fled to my--Eccho, *ruine*?

I thought th' hadst scorn'd to budge a step,  
 For fear. (Quoth Eccho) *Marryguep.*

Am not I here to take thy part?

Then what has quail'd thy stubborn heart?

Have these Bones ratled, and this Head

So often in thy quarrel bled?

Nor did I ever winch or grudge it,

For thy dear sake. (Quoth she) *Mum budget,*

Think'st thou 'twill not be laid i'th' dish,

Thou turn'dst thy back? Quoth Eccho, *Pish.*

To run from those th' hadst overcome

Thus cowardly? Quoth Eccho, *Mum.*

But what a-vengeance makes thee fly

From me too, as thine Enemy?



Or if thou hast no thought of me  
Nor what I have endur'd for thee,  
Yet shame and honor might prevail  
To keep thee thus from turning tail:  
For who would grutch to spend his blood in  
His honors cause? Quoth she, a *Puddin*.  
This said, his grief to anger turn'd,  
Which in his manly stomach burn'd;  
Thirst of Revenge and Wrath, in place  
Of Sorrow, now began to blaze.  
He vow'd the Authors of his woe  
Should equal vengeance undergo;  
And with their Bones and Flesh pay dear  
For what he suffer'd and his *Bear*.  
This b'ing resolv'd, with equal speed  
And rage he hasted to proceed  
To action straight, and giving o're  
To search for *Brain* any more,

He went in quest of *Hudibras*,  
To find him out, where e're he was :  
And if he were above ground, vow'd  
He'd ferret him, lurk where he wou'd.

But scarce had he a furlong on  
This resolute adventure gone,  
When he encounter'd with that Crew  
Whom *Hudibras* did late subdue.  
Honor, Revenge, Contempt and Shame,  
Did equally their breasts enflame.  
'Mong these the fierce *Magnano* was,  
And *Talgol* foe to *Hudibras* ;  
*Cerdon* and *Colon*, Warriors stout  
And resolute as ever fought :  
Whom furious *Orsin* thus bespoke,  
Shall we (quoth he) thus basely brook

The

The vile affront, that poultry Als  
And feeble *Sconndrel Hudibras*,  
With that more poultry *Ragamuffin*  
*Ralpho*, with vapouring and huffing  
Have put upon us, like tame Cattel?  
As if th' had routed us in battel?  
For my part, it shall ne'r be sed,  
I for the washing gave my Head:  
Nor did I turn my back for fear  
Of them, but losing of my *Bear*,  
Which now I'm like to undergo;  
For whether these fell wounds, or no,  
He has receiv'd in fight are mortal,  
Is more than all my skin can foretel,  
Nor do *I know* what is become  
Of him, *more than the Pope of Rome*.  
But if I can but find them out  
That caus'd it, (as I shall no doubt,

Where

Where e're th' in Hugger-mugger lurk )  
Ile make them rue their handy-work ;  
And wish that they had rather dar'd,  
*To pull the Devil by the Beard.*

Quoth *Cerdon*, Noble *Orsin* th' hast  
Great reason to do as thou say'st,  
And so has ev'ry body here  
As well as thou hast or thy *Bear*.  
Others may do as they see good ;  
But if this twig be made of Wood  
That will hold tack, I'le make the Fur  
Fly 'bout the Ears of that old Cur,  
And th' other mungrel Vermin, *Ralph*,  
That brav'd us all in his behalf.  
Thy Bear is safe and out of peril,  
Though lugg'd indeed, and wounded very ill.

My self and *Trulla* made a shift  
To help him out at a dead lift;  
And having brought him bravely off,  
Have left him where he's safe enough.  
There let him rest; for if we stay,  
The Slaves may hap to get away.

This said, they all engag'd to joyn  
Their forces in the same design:  
And forthwith put themselves in search  
Of *Hudibras* upon their march.  
Where leave we them a while, to tell  
What the Victorious *Knight* befell:  
For such, *Crowdero* being fast  
In Dungeon shut, we left him last.  
Triumphant Laurels seem'd to grow  
No where so green as on his brow:

Laden with which, as well as fir'd  
With conquering toil, he now retir'd  
Unto a neighb'ring Castle by,  
To rest his body, and apply  
Fit med'cines to each glorious bruise  
He got in fight, *Reds, Blacks, and Elews*;  
To mollify th' uneasie pang  
Of ev'ry honourable bang.  
Which b'ing by skilful Midwife drest,  
He laid him down to take his rest.

But all in vain; H' had got a hurt  
O'th' inside, of a deadlier sort,  
By *Cupid* made, who took his stand  
Upon a Widows Joynture-Land,  
(For he, in all his amorous battels,  
No 'dvantage finds like Goods and Chattels)

Drew home his Bow, and aiming right,  
 Let fly an Arrow at the *Knight* ;  
 The shaft against a Rib did glance,  
 And gall him in the *Purtenance*.  
 But time had somewhat swag'd his pain,  
 After he found his suit in vain.  
 For that proud Dame, for whom his soul  
 Was burnt in's belly like a coal,  
 ( That Belly that so oft did ake  
 And suffer griping for her sake,  
 Till purging Comfits and Ants Eggs  
 Had almost brought him off his Legs )  
 Us'd him so like a base *Rascallion*,  
 That old *Pyg* ( what d'y' call him ? ) *malio*.  
 That cut his Mistress out of stone,  
 Had not so hard-a-hearted one.  
 She had a thousand jadish tricks,  
 Worse than a Mule that flings and kicks:



'Mong which one cross-grain'd freak she had,  
As insolent as strange and mad :  
She could love none but only such  
As scorn'd and hated her as much.  
'Twas a strange Riddle of a Lady ;  
Not love, if any lov'd her, ha day !  
So Cowards never use their might,  
But against such as will not fight.  
So some diseases have been found  
Only to seize upon the sound.  
He that gets her by heart must say her  
The back-way, like a Witche's Prayer.  
Mean while the *Knight* had no small task,  
To compass what he durst not ask.  
He loves, but dares not make the motion ;  
Her *ignorance* is his *devotion*.  
Like Caitiff vile, that for misdeed  
Rides with his face to rump of Steed,

Or rowing Scull, he's fain to love,  
Look one way, and another move;  
Or like a Tumbler that does play  
His game, and look another way,  
Until he seize upon the Coney:  
Just so does he by Matrimony.  
But all in vain: her subtle snout  
Did quickly wind his meaning out;  
Which she return'd with too much scorn,  
To be by man of Honor born.  
Yet much he bore, until the distress  
He suffer'd from his spiteful Mistress,  
Did stir his stomach, and the Pain  
He had endur'd from her disdain  
Turn'd to regret, so resolute  
That he resolv'd to wave his suit,  
And either to renounce her quite,  
Or for a while play least in sight.

This resolution b'ing put on,  
He kept some months, and more had done;  
But being brought so nigh by fate,  
The Victory he atchiev'd so late  
Did set this thoughts agog, and ope  
A door to discontinu'd hope,  
That seem'd to promise he might win  
His Dame too now his hand was in;  
And that his valour and the honor  
H' had newly gain'd might work upon her,  
These reasons made his mouth to water  
With amorous longings to be at her.

Thought he unto himself, who knows  
But this brave Conquest o're my foes  
May reach her heart, and make that stoop,  
As I but now have forc'd the Troop?

Or rowing Scull, he's fain to love,  
Look one way, and another move;  
Or like a Tumbler that does play  
His game, and look another way,  
Until he seize upon the Coney:  
Just so does he by Matrimony.  
But all in vain: her subtle snout  
Did quickly wind his meaning out;  
Which she return'd with too much scorn,  
To be by man of Honor born.  
Yet much he bore, until the distress  
He suffer'd from his spiteful Mistress,  
Did stir his stomach, and the Pain  
He had endur'd from her disdain  
Turn'd to regret, so resolute  
That he resolv'd to wave his suit,  
And either to renounce her quite,  
Or for a while play least in sight.

This resolution b'ing put on,  
He kept some months, and more had done;  
But being brought so nigh by fate,  
The Victory he atchiev'd so late  
Did set this thoughts agog, and ope  
A door to discontinu'd hope,  
That seem'd to promise he might win  
His Dame too now his hand was in;  
And that his valour and the honor  
H' had newly gain'd might work upon her,  
These reasons made his mouth to water  
With amorous longings to be at her.

Thought he unto himself, who knows  
But this brave Conquest o're my foes  
May reach her heart, and make that stoop,  
As I but now have forc'd the Troop?

It nothing can oppugne love,  
And Vertue invious ways can prove,  
What may not he confide to do  
That brings both love and vertue too?  
But thou bring'st Valour too and wit,  
Two things that seldom fail to hit.  
Valour's a Moufe-trap, Wit a Gin,  
Which Women oft are taken in.  
Then, *Hudibras*, why shouldst thou fear  
To be, that art a Conquerer?  
Fortune th' audacious doth *juvare*,  
But lets the timidous miscarry.  
Then while the honor thou hast got  
Is spick and span-new, piping hot,  
Strike her up bravely thou hadst best,  
And trust thy fortune with the rest.

Such thoughts as these the *Knight* did keep,  
More than his bangs or fleas, from sleep.  
And as an Owl that in a Barn  
Sees a Mouse creeping in the Corn,  
Sits still, and shuts his round blew eyes,  
As if he slept, until he spies  
The little beast within his reach,  
Then starts, and seizes on the wretch :  
So from his Couch the *Knight* did start,  
To seize upon the Widow's heart ;  
Crying with hasty tone and hoarse,  
*Ralpho*, dispatch, To horse, to horse,  
And 'twas but time, for now the Rout  
We left engag'd to seek him out,  
By speedy marches were advanc'd  
Up to the Fort where he ensconc'd,  
And had all th' avenues possess'd  
About the place, from East to West.



That done, awhile they made a halt,  
To view the Ground, and where et' assault :  
Then call'd a Council, which was best,  
By siege or onslaught, to invest  
The enemy : and 'twas agreed,  
By storm and onslaught to proceed.  
This b'ing resolv'd, in comely sort,  
They now drew up t' attack the Fort.  
When *Hudibras*, about to enter  
Upon another gate's adventure,  
To *Ralpho* call'd aloud to arm,  
Not dreaming of approaching storm.  
Whether Dame Fortune, or the care  
Of Angel bad, or Tutelar,  
Did arm, or thrust him on a danger,  
To which he was an utter stranger ;  
That Foresight might, or might not blot  
The glory he had newly got ;

Or to his shame it might be sed,  
They took him napping in his bed:  
To them we leave it to expound,  
That deal in Sciences profound.

His Courser scarce he had bestrid,  
And *Ralpho* that on which he rid,  
When setting ope the Postern Gate,  
To take the Field and Sally at,  
The Foe appear'd, drawn up and drill'd,  
Ready to charge them in the field.

This somewhat startled the bold *Knight*,  
Surpriz'd with th' unexpected sight.

The bruises of his Bones and Flesh

He thought began to smart afresh:

Till recollecting wonted Courage,

His fear was soon converted to rage.

And thus he spake: The Coward Foe,

Whom we but now gave quarter to,

Look,

Look, yonder's rally'd, and appears,  
As if they had outrun their fears.  
The Glory we did lately get,  
The fates command us to repeat.  
And to their wills we must succumb,  
*Quocunque trahunt*, 'tis our doom.  
This is the same numerick Crew  
Which we so lately did subdue,  
The self-same individuals that  
Did run, as Mice do from a Cat,  
When we courageously did wield  
Our Martial weapons in the field,  
To tug for Victory: and when  
We shall our shining blades agen  
Brandish in terror o're our heads,  
They'l straight resume their wonted dreads,  
Fear is an Ague, that forsakes  
And haunts by fits those whom it takes.

And

And they'l opine they feel the pain  
 And blows, they felt to day, again,  
 Then let us boldly charge them home,  
 And make no doubt to overcome.

This said, his Courage to enflame,  
 He call'd upon his *Mistress* name.  
 His Pistol next he cockt anew,  
 And out his nut-brown Whiniard drew.  
 And placing *Ralpho* in the front  
 Reserv'd himself to bear the burnt;  
 As expert Warriors use: then ply'd  
 With Iron heel his Courser's side,  
 Conveying Sympathetick speed  
 From heel of *Knight* to heel of Steed,

Mean while the foe with equal rage  
 And speed advancing to engage,

Both

Both parties now were drawn so close,  
Almost to come to handiblow.  
When *Orsin* first let fly a stone  
At *Ralpho*; not so huge a one  
As that which *Diomed* did maul  
*Æneas* on the Bum withal:  
Yet big enough, if rightly hurl'd,  
T'have sent him to another World;  
Whether above-ground, or below,  
Which *Saints twice dipt* are destin'd to.  
The danger startled the bold *Squire*,  
And made him some few steps retire.  
But *Hudibras* advanc'd to's aid,  
And rouz'd his spirits half dismayd.  
He, wisely doubting lest the shot  
Of th' Enemy now growing hot,  
Might at a distance gall, prest close,  
To come, pell-mell, to handiblow;

And that he might their aim decline,  
Advanc'd still in an oblique line ;  
But prudently forbore to fire,  
Till breast to breast he had got nigher :  
As expert Warriors use to do,  
When hand to hand they charge the foe.  
This Order the advent'rous Knight  
Most Soldier-like observ'd in fight :  
When fortune ( as she's wont ) turn'd fickle  
And for the foe began to stickle.  
The more shame for her *goody-ship*,  
To give so near a friend the slip.  
For *Colon* chusing out a stone,  
Levell'd so right, it thumpt upon  
His manly panch with such a force,  
As almost beat him off his Horse.  
He loos'd his weapon, and the Reyn ;  
But laying fast hold on the Mane,

Preserv'd

Preserv'd his feat : And as a Goose  
In death contracts his Talons loose ;  
So did the *Knight*, and with one claw  
The tricker of his Pistol draw.  
The Gun went off : and as it was  
Still fatal to stout *Hudibras*,  
In all his feats of Arms, when least  
He dreamt of it, to prosper best ;  
So now he far'd : the shot let fly  
At randome 'mong the enemy,  
Pierc'd *Talgol's* Gabberdine, and grazing  
Upon his Shoulder, in the passing  
Lodg'd in *Magnano's* bras Habergeon,  
Who straight *A Surgeon* cry'd *a Surgeon!*  
He tumbled down and as he fell  
Did *Murther, murther, murther*, yell.  
This startled their whole body so,  
That if the *Knight* had not let go



His Arms, but been in warlike plight,  
H' had won (the second time) the fight.  
As if the *Squire* had but faln on,  
He had inevitably done :  
But he, diverted with the care  
Of *Hudibras* his wound, forbare  
To press th' advantage of his fortune,  
While danger did the rest dishearten.  
He had with *Cerdon* been engag'd  
In close encounter, which both wag'd  
So desprately, 'twas hard to say  
Which side was like to get the day.  
And now the busy work of death  
Had tir'd them so, th' agreed to breath,  
Preparing to renew the fight ;  
When th' hard th' disaster of the *Knight*  
And th' other party did divert  
And force their sullen Rage to part

*Ralpho* prest up to *Hudibras*,  
And *Cerdon* where *Magnano* was;  
Each striving to confirm his party  
With stout encouragements and hearty.  
Quoth *Ralpho*, Courage, valiant Sir,  
And let Revenge and Honor stir  
Your spirits up, once more fall on,  
The shatter'd Foe begins to run :  
For if but half so well you knew  
To use your Victory as subdue,  
They durst not, after such a blow  
As you have giv'n them, face us now ;  
But from so formidable a Soldier  
Had fled like Crows when they smell Powder.  
Thrice have they seen your Sword aloft  
Wav'd o're their heads, and fled as oft.  
But if you let them recollect  
Their spirits, now dismay'd and checkt,

You'l

You'l have a harder game to play,  
Then yet y' have had to get the day.

Thus spoke the stout *Squire*; but was heard  
By *Hudibras* with small regard.

His thoughts were fuller of the bang  
He lately took, then *Ralph's* harangue;  
To which he answer'd, Cruel fate  
Tells me thy Counsel comes too late.

The knotted bloud within my hose,  
That from my wounded body flows,  
With mortal *Crisis* doth portend  
My days to appropinque an end.

I am for action now unfit,  
Either of Fortitude or Wit.

Fortune my foe begins to frown,  
Resolv'd to pull my stomach down.

I am not apt upon a wound,  
Or trivial basting, to despond:  
Yet I'd be loath my days to curtail.  
For if I thought my wounds not mortal,  
Or that we'd time enough as yet  
To make an honorable retreat,  
'Twere the best course: but if they find  
We fly, and leave our Arms behind  
For them to seize on, the dishonor  
And danger too is such, I'll sooner  
Stand to it boldly, and take quarter,  
To let them see I am no starter.  
In all the trade of War, no feat  
Is nobler than a brave retreat.  
For those that Run away, and fly,  
Take Place at least of th' enemy

This

This said, the *Squire* with active speed  
Dismounted from his bony Steed,  
To seize the Arms which by mischance  
Fell from the bold *Knight* in a trance.  
These being found out, and restor'd  
To *Hudibras*, their natural Lord,  
The active *Squire* with might and main  
Prepar'd in haste to mount again.  
Thrice he assay'd to mount aloft;  
But by his weighty bum as oft  
He was pull'd back: till having found  
Th' advantage of the rising ground,  
Thither he led his warlike Steed,  
And having plac'd him right, with speed  
Prepar'd again to scale the Beast.  
When *Orsin*, who had newly drest  
The bloody scar upon the shoulder  
Of *Talgol* with *Promethean* powder,

And now was searching for the shot  
That laid *Magnano* on the spot,  
Beheld the sturdy *Squire* afore said  
Preparing to climb up his Horse side,  
He left his Cure, and laying hold  
Upon his Arms with Courage bold  
Cry'd out, 'Tis now no time to dally,  
The Enemy begins to rally:  
Let us that are unhurt and whole  
Fall on, and happy man be's dole.

This said, like to a Thunderbolt  
He flew with fury to th' assault,  
Striving the Enemy to attack  
Before he reacht his Horse's back.  
*Ralpho* was mounted now, and gotten  
O'rethwart his Beast with active vaulting,

Wrigling his body to recover  
His seat, and cast his right Leg over ;  
When *Orsin* rushing in, bestow'd  
On Horse and Man so heavy a load,  
The Beast was startled, and begun  
To kick and fling like mad, and run,  
Bearing the tough *Squire* like a Sack,  
Or stout King *Richard*, on his back :  
Till stumbling, he threw him down,  
Sore bruis'd, and cast into a swoond.  
Mean while the *Knight* began to rowse  
The sparkles of his wanted prowess ;  
He thrust his Hand into his Hose,  
And found both by his Eyes and Nose,  
'Twas only Choler, and not Bloud,  
That from his wounded body flow'd.  
This, with the hazard of the *Squire*,  
Inflam'd him with despightful Ire ;



Courageously he fac'd about,  
And drew his other Pistol out,  
And now had half-way bent the Cock,  
When *Cerdon* gave so fierce a shock,  
With sturdy truncheon, thwart his Arm  
That down it fell, and did no harm;  
Then stoutly pressing on with speed,  
Assay'd to pull him off his Steed.  
The *Knight* his Sword had only left,  
With which he *Cerdon's* Head had cleft,  
Or at the least cropt off a Limb,  
But *Orsin* came and rescu'd him.  
He with his Launce attack'd the *Knight*  
Upon his quarters opposite.  
But as a Bark that in foul weather,  
Toss'd by two adverse winds together,  
Is bruis'd and beaten to and fro,  
And knows not which to turn him to :

So far'd the *Knight* between two foes,  
 And knew not which of them t' oppose,  
 Till *Orsin* charging with his Launce  
 At *Hudibras*, by spightful chance  
 Hit *Cerdon* such a bang, as stunn'd  
 And laid him flat upon the ground.  
 At this the *Knight* began to chear up,  
 And raising up himself on stirrup,  
 Cry'd out *Victoria*; lie thou there,  
 And I shall straight dispatch another,  
 To bear thee company in death:  
 But first I'll halt awhile and breathe  
 As well he might: for *Orsin* griev'd  
 At th' wound that *Cerdon* had receiv'd,  
 Ran to relieve him with his lore,  
 And cure the hurt he made before.  
 Mean while the *Knight* had wheel'd about,  
 To breath himself, and next find out

Th' advantage of the ground, where best  
He might the ruffled foe infect:  
This b'ing resolv'd, he spurr'd his Breed,  
To run at *Orsin* with full speed,  
While he was busy in the care  
Of *Cerdon's* wound, and unaware:  
But he was quick, and had already  
Unto the part apply'd remedy,  
And seeing th' enemy prepar'd,  
Drew up, and stood upon his guard.  
Then like a Warrior right expert  
And skilful in the martial Art,  
The subtle *Knight* straight made a halt,  
And judg'd it best to stay th' assault,  
Until he had reliev'd the *Squire*,  
And then (in order) to retire;  
Or, as occasion should invite,  
With Forces joyn'd renew the fight.

Ralpho by this time disentrane'd,  
Upon his Bum himself advanc'd,  
Though sorely bruise'd, his Limbs all o're  
With ruthless bangs were stiff and sore.  
Right fain he would have got upon  
His feet again, to get him gone;  
When *Hudibras* to aid him came.

Quoth he, (and call'd him by his name)  
Courage, the day at length is ours,  
And we once more as Conquerours,  
Have both the Field and Honor won,  
The Foe is profligate and run,  
I mean all such as can, for some  
This hand hath sent to their long home;  
And some lye sprawling on the ground,  
With many a gash and bloody wound,

*Cæsar* himself could never say  
He got two victories in a day ;  
As I have done, that can say, Twice I  
In one day, *Veni, vidi, vici.*  
The foe's so numerous, that we  
Cannot so often *vincere*  
As they *perire*, and yet enough  
Be left to strike an after-blow.  
Then lest they rally, and once more  
Put us to fight the business o're,  
Get up, and mount thy Steed, dispatch,  
And let us both their motions watch.

Quoth *Ralph*, I should not, if I were  
In case for action, now be here ;  
Nor have I turn'd my back, or hang'd  
An Arse, for fear of being bang'd ;

was for you I got these harms,  
 advent'ring to fetch off your Arme.  
 The blows and drubs I have receiv'd,  
 have bruis'd my body, and bereav'd  
 My Limbs of strength: unless you stoop,  
 And reach your hand to pull me up,  
 I shall lie here, and be a prey  
 To those who now are run away.

That shalt thou not (quoth *Hudibras* :)

We read, the Ancients held it was

More honorable far *Servare*

*Civem*, than slay an adversary,

The one we oft to day have done ;

The other shall dispatch anon.

And though th' art of a diff'rent Church,

I will not leave thee in the lurch.

This

This said, he jogg'd his good Steed nigher,  
And steer'd him gently toward the *Squire*:  
Then bowing down his Body stretcht  
His hand out, and at *Ralpho* reacht;  
When *Trulla*, whom he did not mind,  
Charg'd him like Lightning behind.  
She had been long in search about  
*Magnano's* wound, to find it out:  
But could find none, nor where the shot  
That had so startled him was got.  
But having found the worst was past,  
She fell to her own work at last  
The pillage of the Prisoners,  
Which all in feat of Arms was hers:  
And now to plunder *Ralph* she flew,  
When *Audibras* his hard fate drew  
To succor him; for as he bow'd  
To help him up, she laid a load



Of blows so heavy, and plac'd so well,  
On th' other side, that down he fell.

Yield Scoundrel base, (quoth she) or dye;  
Thy Life is mine and Liberty,  
But if thou think'st I took thee tardy,  
And dar'st presume to be so hardy,  
To try thy fortune o're a fresh,  
I'll wave my Title to thy flesh,  
Thy Arms and Baggage, now my right;  
And if thou hast the heart to try't,  
I'll lend the back thy self awhile  
And once more for that carcass vile.  
Fight upon tick---Quoth Hudibras,  
Thou offer'st nobly, valiant Last,  
And I shall take thee at thy word.  
First let me rise, and take my sword;

That

That sword which has so oft this day  
Through Squadrons of my foes made way  
And some to other Worlds dispatcht,  
Now with a feeble Spinster matcht,  
Will blush with bloud ignoble stain'd,  
By which no honor's to be gain'd.  
But if thou'lt take m' advice in this,  
Consider while thou may'lt, what 'tis  
To interrupt a Victor's course,  
B' opposing such a trivial force.  
For if with Conquest I come off,  
(And that I shall do sure enough)  
Quarter thou canst not have, nor grace,  
By law of Arms, in such a case;  
Both which I now do offer freely.  
I scorn (quoth she) thou Coxcomb silly,

( Clapping

(Clapping her hand upon her breech,  
 To shew how much she priz'd his speech)  
 Quarter or Counsel from a foe:  
 If thou canst force me to it, do.  
 But lest it should again be fed,  
 When I have once more won thy head,  
 I took thee napping unprepar'd,  
 Arm, and betake thee to thy Guard

This said, she to her Tackle fell,  
 And on the *Knight* let fall a peal  
 Of blows so fierce, and prest so home,  
 That he retir'd and follow'd's bum.  
 Stand to't (quoth she) or yield to mercy.  
 It is not fighting *Arise-verse*  
 Shall serve thy turn--This stirr'd his spleen  
 More than the danger he was in,

The blows he felt, or was to feel,  
Although th' already made him reel.  
Honor, despight, revenge and shame,  
At once unto his stomach came;  
Which fir'd it so, he rais'd his Arm  
Above his Head, and rain'd a storm  
Of blows so terrible and thick,  
As if he meant to hush her quick.  
But she upon her truncheon took them,  
And by oblique diversion broke them;  
Waiting an opportunity  
To pay all back with usury:  
Which long she fail'd not of, for now  
The *Knight* with one dead-doing blow  
Resolving to decide the fight,  
And she with quick and cunning flight  
Avoiding it, the force and weight  
He charg'd upon it was so great,

As almost sway'd him to the ground.  
No sooner she th' advantage found,  
But in she flew, and seconding  
With home-made thrust the heavy swing,  
She laid him flat upon his side,  
And mounting on his Trunk a-stride,  
Quoth she, I told thee what would come  
Of all thy vapouring, base Scum.  
Say, will the Law of Arms allow  
I may have Grace, and Quarter now?  
Or wilt thou rather break thy word,  
And stain thine Honor, than thy Sword.  
A Man of War to damn his Soul,  
In basely breaking his Parol.  
And when before the Fight, th' hadst vow'd  
To give no Quarter in cold blood:  
Now thou hast got me for a Tartar,  
To make m' against my will take quarter?

Why dost not put me to the Sword,  
 But cowardly fly from thy word?  
 Quoth *Hudibras*, the day's thine own;  
 Thou and thy Stars have cast me down:  
 My Laurels are transplanted now,  
 And flourish on thy conqu'ring brow:  
 My loss of Honor's great enough.  
 Thou need'st not brand it with a scoff;  
 Sarcasmes may eclipse thine own,  
 But cannot blur my lost renown:  
 I am not now in Fortune's power,  
*He that is down can fall no lower.*  
 The ancient *Hero's* were illustrious  
 For b'ing benigne, and not blustrous  
 Against a vanquish't foe: their swords  
 Were sharp and trenchant, not their words;  
 And did in fight but cut work-out  
 T'employ their courtesies about.

Quoth



Quoth she, although thou hast deserv'd  
 Base *Slubberdegullion*, to be serv'd  
 As thou didst vow to deal with me;  
 If thou hadst got the Victory;  
 Yet I shall rather act a part  
 That suits my Fame, than thy desert.  
 Thy Arms, thy Liberty, beside  
 All that's on the outside of thy Hide,  
 Are mine by military Law,  
 Of which I will not bare one straw:  
 The rest, thy Life and Limbs, once more;  
 Though doubly forfeit, I restore.

Quoth *Hudibras*, it is too late  
 For me to treat or stipulate;  
 What thou Commandst I must obey:  
 Yet those whom I expurg'd to day,



Of thine own party, I let go,  
 And gave them life and freedom too,  
 Both *Dogs* and *Bear*, upon their parol,  
 Whom I took pris'ners in this quarrel.

Quoth *Trulla*, Whether thou or they  
 Let one another run away,  
 Concerns not me; but was't not thou  
 That gave *Crowdero* quarter too?  
*Crowdero*, whom in Irons bound;  
 Thou basely threw'st into *Lob's* pound,  
 Where still he lies, and with regret  
 His generous Bowels rage and fret.  
 But now thy carcass shall redeem,  
 And serve to be exchange for him.

This said, the *Knight* did straight submit,  
 And laid his weapons at her feet.

Next

Next he disrob'd his Gaberdine,  
And with it did himself resign.  
She took it, and forthwith devesting  
The Mantle that she wore, said jesting,  
Take that, and wear it for my sake;  
Then threw it o're his sturdy back.  
And as the *French* we conquer'd once,  
Now give us Laws for Pantaloons,  
The length of Breeches, and the gathers,  
Port-cannons, Perriwigs, and Feathers;  
Just so the proud insulting Lads  
Array'd and dighted *Hudibras*.

Mean while the other Champions, yest  
In hurry of the fight dispers'd.  
Arriv'd, when *Trulla* won the day,  
To share in th' Honor and the Prey,

And out of *Hudibras* his Hide  
With vengeance to be satisfy'd ;  
Which now they were about to pour  
Upon him in a wooden shower.  
But *Trulla* thrust her self between,  
And striding o're his back agen,  
She brandisht o're her head his sword,  
And vow'd they should not break her word ;  
Sh' had given him quarter, and her bloud  
Or theirs would make their quarter good.  
For she was bound by Law of Arms,  
To see him safe from further harms,  
In Dungeon deep *Cromdero* cast  
By *Hudibras* as yet lay fast,  
Where to the hard and ruthless stones  
His great Heart made perpetual moans,  
Him she resolv'd that *Hudibras*  
Should ransom, and supply his place.

This stopt their fury, and the basting  
Which toward *Hudibras* was halting.

They thought it was but just and right,  
That what we had atchiev'd in fight,

She should dispose of how she pleas'd,  
*Crowdero* ought to be releas'd :

Nor could that any way be done  
So well as this she pitcht upon :

For who a better could imagine ?

This therefore they resolv'd t' engage in.

The *Knight* and *Squire* first they made

Rise from the ground where they were laid ;

Then mounted both upon their Horses,

But with their Faces to the *Arses*,

*Orsin* led *Hudibras's* beast,

And *Talgol* that which *Ralpho* prest,

Whow stout *Magnano*, valiant *Cerdon*  
And *Colon* waited as a guard on,  
All ush'ring *Trulla*, in the reer  
With th' Arms of either prisoner.  
In this proud order and array  
They put themselves upon their way,  
Striving to reach th' *enchanted Castle*,  
Where stout *Crowdero* in durance lay still.  
Thither with greater speed, than shows  
And triumphs over conquer'd foes  
Do use t' allow, or than the *Bears*  
Or *Pageants* born before *Lord Mayors*  
Are wont to use, they soon arriv'd,  
In order Soldier-like contriv'd,  
Still marching in a warlike posture,  
As fit for Battel as for Muster.  
The *Knight* and *Squire* they first unhorse,  
And bending 'gainst their Fort their force,

They

They all advanc'd, and round about  
Begirt the *Magical Redoubt*.

*Magnan*' led up in this adventure,  
And made way for the rest to enter.

For he was skilful in *Black Art*

No less than he that built the Fort;

And with an Iron Mace laid flat

A breach, which straight all enter'd at,

And in the wooden Dungeon found

*Crowdero* laid upon the ground.

Him they release from durance base,

Restor'd t' his *Fiddle* and his *Cafe*,

And liberty, his thirsty rage

With luscious vengeance to assuage.

For he no sooner was at large,

But *Trulla* straight brought on her charge,

And in the self-same *Limbo* put

The *Knight* and *Squire* where he was shut.

Where



Where leaving them i' th' wretched hole,  
Their bangs and durance to condole,  
Confin'd and conjur'd into narrow  
Enchanted mansion, to know sorrow;  
In the same order and array  
Which they advanc'd, they marcht away.

But *Hudibras* who scorn'd to stoop  
To Fortune, or be said to droop,  
Chear'd up himself with ends of Verse,  
And Sayings of Philosophers.  
Quoth he, Th' one half of Man, his mind,  
Is *Sui juris*, unconfin'd,  
And cannot be laid by the heels,  
What e're the other moiety feels.  
'Tis not Restraint or Liberty  
That makes Men prisoners or free;

But



But perturbations that possels  
 The Mind or *Equanimities*.  
 The whole world was not half so wide  
 To *Alexander*, when he cry'd  
 Because he had but one to subdue,  
 As was a pauntry narrow Tub to  
*Diogenes*, who is not fed  
 (For ought that ever I could read)  
 To whine, put finger i' th' eye, and sob  
 Because h' had ne'r another *Tub*.  
 The Ancients make two several kinds  
 Of Prowess in heroick minds,  
 The *Active* and the *Passive* valiant;  
 Both which are *pari libra* gallant;  
 For both to give blows and to carry,  
 In fights are equinecessary;  
 But in defeats, the *Passive* stout  
 Are always found to stand it out

Most

Most desp'rately, and to out-doe  
The Active, 'gainst a conqu'ring foe.  
Though we with blacks and blews are suggil'd,  
Or, as the vulgar say, are *cudgel'd*:  
He that is valiant, and dares fight,  
Though drubb'd can lose no honor by't.  
Honor's a *lease for Lives to com*,  
And cannot be *extended* from  
The legal Tenant: 'tis a Chattel,  
Not to be forfeited in Battel,  
If he that in the field is slain,  
Be in the *Bed of Honor* lain:  
He that is beaten may be fed  
To lye in Honor's *Truckle-bed*.  
For as we see th' eclipsed Sun  
By mortals is more gaz'd upon,  
Tahn when adorn'd with all his light  
He shines in Serene Sky most bright;

So Valour in a low estate  
Is most admir'd and wonder'd at.

Quoth *Ralph*, How great I do not know

We may by being beaten grow ;

But none that see how here we sit,

Will judge us overgrown with wit.

As gifted *Brake* preaching by

A Carnal Hour-glass, do imply

*Illumination* can convey

Into them what they have to say,

But not how much ; so well enough

Know you to charge, but not draw off.

For who without a Cap and Banble,

Having subdu'd a Bear and Rabble,

And might with Honor have come off,

Would put it to a second proof ?

A politick exploit, right fit  
For *Presbyterian Zeal* and Wit.

Quoth *Hudibras*, that *Cuckow's* Stone,  
*Ralpho*, thou always harp'st upon  
When thou at any thing would'st rail,  
Thou mak'st *Presbytery* thy scale  
To take the height on't and explain  
To what degree it is prophane  
Whats'ever will not with thy (*what d' ye call*)  
Thy light *Jump* right, thou call'st *Synodical*.  
As if *Presbytery* were a standard  
To size whats'ever's to be slander'd.  
Dost not remember how this day  
Thou to my Beard wast bold to say  
That thou could'st prove *Bear-baiting* equal  
With *Synods*, *Orthodox* and *Legals*.

Do if thou can'st, for I deny'r,  
And dare thee to't with all thy *light*.

Quoth *Ralpho*, Truly that is no  
Hard matter for a man to do  
That has but any *Guts in's Brains*,  
And could believe it worth his pains,  
But since you dare and urge me to it,  
You'll find I've light enough to do it.

*Synods* are mystical *Bear-gardens*,  
Where *Elders*, *Deputies*, *Churchwardens*,  
And other Members of the Court  
Manage the *Babylonish* sport.  
For *Prolocutor*, *Scribe*, and *Bearward*,  
Do differ only in a mere word.  
Both are but sev'ral *Synagogues*  
Of carnal Men, and *Bears* and *Dogs*.

Both

Both *Anticristian Assemblies*,  
 To mischief bent as far's in them lies :  
 Both stave and tail, with fierce contests,  
 The one with Men, the other Beasts.  
 The difference is, The one fights with  
 The Tongue, the other with the Teeth ;  
 And that they bait but *Bears* in this,  
 In th' others *Souls* and *Conferences* ;  
 Where *Saints* themselves are brought to stake  
 For *Gospel-light* and *Conscience* sake ;  
 Expos'd to *Scribers* and *Presbyters*,  
 Instead of *Mastives Dogs* and *Curs* ;  
 Than whom th' have less humanity,  
 For these at souls of Men will fly.  
 This to the *Prophet* did appear,  
 Who in a Vision saw a *Bear*,  
 Prefiguring the beastly rage  
 Of *Church-rule* in this later Age :



As is demonstrated at full  
 By him that baited the *Pope's Bull*.  
*Bears* naturally are Beasts of prey,  
 That live by Rapine, so do they,  
 What are their *Orders, Constitutions,*  
*Church-Censures, Curses, Absolutions,*  
 But sev'ral mystic chains they make,  
 To tye poor Christians to the stake  
 And then set heathen *Officers,*  
 Instead of *Dogs,* about their ears  
 For to prohibit and dispence,  
 To find out or to make offence,  
 Of Hell and Heaven to dispose,  
 To play with Souls at fast and loose,  
 To set what *Characters* they please,  
 And mulcts on Sin or Godlines;  
 Reduce the Church to *Gospel-Order,*  
 By *Rapine, Sacriledge, and Murther;*



To make *Presbytery* supream,  
 And *Kings* themselves submit to them;  
 And force all people, though against  
 Their *Consciences*, to turn *Saints*,  
 Must prove a pretty thriving Trade,  
 When *Saints* Monopolists are made,  
 When pious frauds and holy shifts  
 Are dispensations and gifts,  
 There Godliness becomes mere Ware,  
 And ev'ry Synod but a Fair:

*Synods* are whelps of th' *Inquisition*,  
 A mungrel breed of like pernicion,  
 And growing up became the Sires  
 Of *Scribes*, *Commissioners*, and *Trials*;  
 Whose bus'ness is, by cunning sight  
 To cast a figure for mens *Light*;

To find in lines of Beard and Face,  
The Physiognomy of Grace;  
And by the sound and twang of Nose,  
If all be sound within disclose,  
Free from a crack or flaw of sinning,  
As Men try *Pipkins* by the ringing.  
By *Black Caps*, underlaid with *White*,  
Give certain guess at inward *Light*;  
Which *Serjeants at the Gospel* wear,  
To make the *spiritual Calling* clear.  
The *Handkerchief* about the neck  
(*Canonical Cravat* of *Smeeke*,  
From whom the Institution came,  
When Church and State they set on flame;  
And worn by them as badges then  
Of *spiritual Warfaring Men*)  
Judge rightly if *Regeneration*  
Be of the *newest Cut* in fashion.

Sure 'tis an Orthodox opinion  
That *Grace is founded in Dominion*.  
Great *Piety* consists in *Pride*;  
To rule is to be *sanctify'd*:  
To domineer, and to controul  
Both o're the Body and the Soul,  
Is the most perfect *discipline*  
Of Church-rule, and by right *divine*.  
*Bel* and the *Dragons* Chaplains were  
More moderate than these by far:  
For they (poor Knaves) were glad to cheat,  
To get their Wives and Children meat;  
But these will not be fobb'd off so,  
They must have Wealth and Power too,  
Or else with bloud and desolation  
They'l tear it out o' th' heart o' th' Nation.

Sure

Sure these themselves from Primitive  
And Heathen Purity do derive,  
When *Butchers* were the only *Clerks*,  
*Elders* and *Presbyters* of *Kirks*,  
Whose *Directory* was to *kill*;  
And some believe it is so still.  
The only difference is, that then  
They slaughter'd only *Beasts*, now *Men*.  
For then to sacrifice a *Bullock*,  
Or now and then a *Child* to *Moloch*,  
They count a vile Abomination,  
But not to slaughter a whole *Nation*.  
*Peresbytery* does but translate  
The Papacy to a *Free State*,  
A *Common-wealth* of *Popery*,  
Where ev'ry Village is a *See*  
As well as *Rome*, and must maintain  
A *Tithe Pig Metropolitan* :

Where ev'ry *Presbyter* and *Deacon*  
Commands the *Keys* for *Cheese* and *Bacon* ;  
And ev'ry *Hamlet's* governed  
By's *Holiness*, the *Church's head*,  
More haughty and severe in's place  
Than *Gregory* and *Boniface*.  
Such Church must (surely) be a *Monster*  
With many heads: for if we conster  
What in th' *Apocalyps* we find,  
According to th' *Apostles* mind,  
'Tis that the *Whore of Babylon*  
With many heads did ride upon ;  
Which Heads denote the sinful *Tribes*  
Of *Deacon*, *Priest*, *Lay-elder*, *Scribe*.  
*Lay-elder*, *Simeon* to *Levi*,  
Whose little finger is as heavy

As Joins of Patriarchs, Prince-Prelate,  
 Archbishop-secular. This Zelot  
 Is of a mungrel, divers kind,  
 Clerick before, and Lay behind;  
 A Lawless *Linsy-wealpy* Brother,  
 Half of one Order, half another;  
 A Creature of amphibious nature,  
 On Land a Beast, a Fish in Water;  
 That always preys on Grace, or Sin;  
 A Sheep without, a Wolf within  
 This fierce Inquisitor has chief  
 Dominion over mens Belief  
 And Manners; can pronounce a *Saint*  
 Idolatrous, or ignorant,  
 When superciliously he sits  
 Through courtest Boulter others gifts.  
 For all Men live and judge amiss  
 Whose Talents jump not just with his.

He'l lay on *Gifts* with hands, and place  
 On dullest noddle *light* and *grace*,  
 The manufacture of the *Kirk*,  
 Whose Pastors are but th' Handiwork  
 Of his Mechanick Pawes, instilling  
 Divinity in them by feeling.  
 From whence they start up *chopin Vessels*,  
 Made by Contact, as Men get Meazles.  
 So *Cardinals*, they say, do grope  
 At th' other end the new made *Pope*.

Hold, hold, quoth *Hudibras*, *Soft fire*,  
 They say, *does make sweet Malt*. Good *Squire*,  
*Festina lente*, not too fast;  
 For *haste* (the Proverb says) *makes waste*.  
 The Quirks and Cavils thou dost make  
 Are false, and built upon mistake.



And I shall bring you, with your pack

Of *Fallacies*, t' *Elenchi* back ;

And put your Arguments in mood

And figure, to be understood.

I'll force you by right ratioecination

To leave your *Vitilitigation*,

And make you keep to th' question close,

And argue *Dialectic*s.

The Question then, to state it first,

Is which is *better*, or which *worst*

*Synods* or *Bears*. *Bears* I avow

To be the worst, and *Synods* thou.

But to make good th' Assertion,

Thou say'st th' are really *all one*.

If so, not *worst* ; for if th' are *idem*,

Why then, *Tantundem dat tantidem*.

For if they are the *same*, by course  
 Neither is *better*, neither *worse*.  
 But I deny they are the *same*,  
 More than a *Maggot* and I am.  
 That both are *Animalia*,  
 I grant, but not *Rationalia*:  
 For though they do agree in kind,  
 Specifick difference we find.  
 And can no more make *Bears* of these,  
 Than prove *my Horse* is *Socrates*.

That *Synods* are *Bear-gardens* too,  
 Thou dost affirm; but I say no:  
 And thus I prove it, in a word.  
 Whats'ever *Assembly's* not impowr'd  
 To *censure*, *curse*, *absolve*, and *ordain*,  
 Can be no *Synod*: but *Bear-garden*

Has no such pow'r, *Ergo* 'tis none.

And so thy Sophistry's o'rethrown.

But yet we are beside the Question

Which thou didst raise the first contest on;

For that was, Whether *Bears* are better

Than *Synod-men*, I say *Negatur*.

That *Bears* are *Beasts*, and *Synods* Men,

Is held by all: they'r better then.

For *Bears* and *Dogs* on four Legs go,

As *Beasts*, but *Synod-men* on Two.

'Tis true, they all have *Teeth* and *Nails*;

But prove that *Synod-men* have *tails*;

Or that a rugged, shaggy *Fur*

Grows o're the Hide of *Presbyter*;

Or that his *snout* and *spacious Ears*

Do hold proportion with a *Bear's*.

A Bear's a savage Beast, of all  
Most ugly and unnatural,  
Whelp't without form, until the Dam  
Have lick't him into shape and frame;  
But all thy *light* can ne'r evict  
That ever *Synod-man* was lick't;  
Or brought to any other fashion  
Than his own Will and Inclination.

But thou dost further yet in this  
Oppugne thy self and sense, that is,  
Thou wouldst have *Presbyters* to go  
For *Bears* and *Dogs* and *Bearwards* too.  
A strange *Chimera* of Beasts and Men,  
Made up of pieces Heterogene,  
Such as in Nature never met  
*In eodem Subiecto* yet.

Thy other Arguments are all  
Supposures, Hypothetical,  
That do but beg, and we may chuse  
Either to grant them, or refuse.  
Much thou hast said, which I know when,  
And where thou stol'st from other Men,  
(Whereby 'tis plain thy *light* and *gifts*  
Are all but plagiary shifts;)   
And is the same that *Ranter* sed,  
That arguing with me, broke my head,  
And tore a handful of my Beard:  
The self-same Cavils, then I heard,  
When b'ing in hot dispute about  
This Controversie, we fell out;  
And what thou know'st I answer'd then,  
Will serve to answer thee agen.

Quoth-

Quoth *Ralpho*, Nothing but th' abuse  
Of *Humane Learning* you produce;  
*Learning* that Cobweb of the Brain,  
*Profane*, erroneous, and vain;  
A trade of Knowledge as repleat  
As others are with fraud and cheat;  
An Art t' incumber *Gifts* and Wit,  
And render both for nothing fit;  
Makes *light* unactive, dull and troubled,  
Like little *David*, in *Saul's* Doublet;  
A cheat that Scholars put upon  
Other mens reason and their own;  
A Fort of Error, to enconce  
Absurdity and Ignorance,  
That renders all the avenues  
To Truth impervious and abstruse,  
By making plain things, in debate,  
By Art, perplext and intricate:

For nothing goes for Sense or *Light*  
 That will not with old rules jump right.  
 As if Rules were not in the Schools  
 Deriv'd from Truth, but Truth from Rules.

This *Pagan*, *Heathenish* invention  
 Is good for nothing but Contention.  
 For as in Sword-and-Buckler Fight,  
 All blows do on the Target light :  
 So when Men argue, the great'st part  
 O' th' Contest falls on terms of Art,  
 Untill the Fustian stuff be spent,  
 And then they fall to th' Argument.

Quoth *Hudibras*, Friend *Ralph*, thou hast  
 Out-run the *Constable* at last;  
 For thou art fallen on a new  
 Dispute, as senseless as untrue,

But



But to the former opposite,  
And *contrary as black to white*;  
Mere *Disparata*, that concerning  
*Presbytery*, this *Human Learning*;  
Two things s' averse, they never yet  
But in thy rambling fancy met,  
But I shall take a fit occasion  
T' evince thee by *Ratiocination*,  
Some other time, in place more proper  
Than this w' are in: therefore let's stop here,  
And rest our weary'd bones awhile,  
Already tir'd with other toil.

---



# Annotations

TO THE

## FIRST PART.

That could as well bind o're as fwaddle.

**B**Ind over to the Sessions, as being a Justice of the Peace in his Countrey, as well as Colonel of a Regiment of Foot, in the Parliaments Army, and a Committee-man,

As *Mountaigne* playing with his Cat.

*Mountaigne* in his Essays supposes his Cat thought him a Fool, for losing his time, in playing with her.

Profoundly skill'd in *Analitique*.

*Analitique* is a part of *Logick* that teaches to Decline and Construe *Reason*, as *Grammar* does *Words*.

A Babylonish Dialect.

A confusion of Languages, such, as some of our Modern *Virtuosi* use to express themselves in.

That had the *Orator* who once,

*Demosthenes*, who is said to have a defect in his Pronunciation, which he cur'd by using to speak with little stones in his mouth.

He could reduce all things to Acts.

The old Philosophers thought to extract Notions out of Natural things, as *Chymists* do *Spirits* and  
Essences,

Essences, and when they had refin'd them into the nicest subtleties, gave them as insignificant Names, as those Operators do their Extractions: But (as *Seneca* says) the subtler things are render'd, they are but the nearer to Nothing. So are all their definitions of things by Acts, the nearer to Nonsense.

Where Truth in person does appear.

Some Authors have mistaken Truth for a Real thing, when it is nothing but a right Method of putting those Notions, or Images of things (in the understanding of Man) into the same state and order, that their Originals hold in Nature, and therefore *Aristotle* says, *unumquodque sicut se habet secundum esse, ita se habet secundum veritatem.* Met. L. 2.

Like words congeal'd in Northern Air.

Some report that in *Nova Zembla*, and *Greenland*, Mens words are wont to be Frozen in the Air, and at the Thaw may be heard.

He knew the Seat of Paradise.

There is nothing more ridiculous than the various

opinions of Authors about the Seat of Paradise; Sir *Walter Rawleigh* has taken a great deal of pains to collect them, in the beginning of his *History of the World*; where those who are unsatisfied, may be fully inform'd.

By a High-Dutch Interpreter.

*Goropius Becanus* endeavors to prove that High-Dutch was the Language that *Adam* and *Eve* spoke in *Paradise*.

If either of them had a Navel.

*Adam* and *Eve* being made, and not Conceived, and Form'd in the womb, had no Navels, as some Leaned Men have suppos'd, because they had no need of them.

Who first made Musick Malleable.

Musick is said to be invented by *Pythagoras*, who first found out the Proportion of Notes, from the sounds of Hammers upon an Anvil.

Like

Like *Mahomet's* were *Afs* and *Widgeon*.

*Mahomet* had a tame Dove that used to pick Seeds out of his Ear, that it might be thought to whisper and Inspire him. His *Afs* was so intimate with him, that the *Mahometans* believe it carry'd him to Heaven, and stays there with him to bring him back again.

It was Canonique, and did grow  
In Holy Orders by strict Vow.

He made a Vow never to cut his *Beard*, until the Parliament had subdued the King, of which Order of Phanatique Votaries, there were many in those times.

So Learned *Taliacotius*, &c.

*Taliacotius* was an *Italian* Chirurgeon, that found out a way to repair lost and decay'd Noses.

But left the Trade, as many more,  
Have lately done, &c.

*Oliver Cromwel* and *Colonel Pride* had been both Brewers.

That Cæsar's Horse, who as Fame goes,  
Had Corns upon his Feet and Toes.

*Julius Cæsar* had a Horse with Feet like a Man's. *Ut-  
batur equo insigni, pedibus prope Humanis, & in mo-  
dum Digitorum ungulis fissis.* Sueton in *Jul. Cap.* 61.

The mighty Tyrian Queen that gain'd  
With subtle shreds, a Tract of Land.

*Dido* Queen of *Carthage*, who bought as much Land  
as she could compais with an Oxes Hide, which  
she cut into small Thongs, and cheated the owner  
of so much ground, as serv'd her to build *Carthage*  
upon.

As the bold Trojan Knight seen Hell.

*Æneas* whom *Virgil* reports to use a Golden Bough,  
for a Pass to Hell, and Tailors call that place Hell,  
where they put all they steal.

In Magick, Talisman, and Cabal.

Talisman is a Device to destroy any sort of Vermin  
by casting their Images in Metal, in a precise mi-  
nute, when the Stars are perfectly inclin'd to do  
them



them all the mischief they can. This has been experimented by some modern *Virtuosi*, upon Rats, Mice, and Fleas, and found (as they affirm) to produce the Effect with admirable success.

*Raymund Lully* interprets *Cabal* out of the *Arabick*, to signify *Scientia superabundans*, which his Commentator, *Cornelius Agrippa*, by over magnifying, has render'd a very superfluous Foppery.

As far as *Adam's* first Green Breeches.

The Author of *Magia Adamica* endeavors to prove the Learning of the antient *Magi*, to be deriv'd from that knowledge which God himself taught *Adam* in *Paradise*, before the Fall.

And much of *Terra Incognita*

The Intelligible world could say.

The Intelligible world, is a kind of *Terra del Fuego*, or *Pfittacorum Reg'o*, discover'd only by the Philosophers, of which they talk, like Parrots, what they do not understand.

As Learn'd as the wild Irish are.

No Nation in the World is more addicted to this occult Philosophy, than the Wild Irish, as appears

pears by the whole practice of their Lives, of which see *Cambden* in his description of *Ireland*.

In *Rosy Crucian* Lore as Learned

As he that *vere Adeptus* earned.

The Fraternity of the *Rosy Crucians* is very like the Sect of the ancient *Gnostici*, who call'd themselves so, from the excellent Learning they pretended to, although they were really the most ridiculous Sots of all Mankind.

*Vere Adeptus*, is one that has Commenc'd in their Fanatique extravagance.

Thou that with Ale or viler Liquors

Did'st inspire *Withers*, *Pryn*, and *Vickars*.

This *Vickars* was a Man of as great Interest and Authority in the late Reformation, as *Pryn* or *Withers*, and as able a Poet; He Translated *Virgils Æneides* into as horrible Travesty in earnest, as the French *Scaroon* did in Burlesque, and was only out-done in his way by the Politique Author of *Oceana*.

We that are wisely mounted higher.

This Speech is set down as it was deliver'd by the Knight

Knight in his own words : but since it is below the Gravity of Heroical Poetry, to admit of Humor, but all men are oblig'd to speak wisely alike; And too much of so extravagant a Folly would become tedious, and impertinent: The rest of his Harangues have only his Sense exprest in other words, unless in some few places where his own words could not be so well avoided.

### In Bloudy Cynarctomachy.

Cynarctomachy signifies nothing in the World, but a Fight between *Dogs* and *Bears*, though both the Learned and Ignorant agree, that in such words very great Knowledge is contained: and our Knight as one, or both of those, was of the same opinion.

Or Force, we averruncate it.

Another of the same kind, which though it appear ever so Learned, and Profound, means nothing else but the weeding of Corn.

The *Indians* fought for the Truth

Of th' Elephant, and Monkeys Tooth.

The History of the White Elephant and the Monkeys Tooth, which the *Indians* ador'd, is written by

by Monsieur *Le Blanc*. This Monkey's Tooth was taken by the Portuguese from those that worship't it, and though they offer'd a vast Ransom for it, yet the Christians were perswaded by their Priests, rather to burn it. But as soon as the Fire was kindled, all the People present were not able to indure the horrible stink that came from it, as if the Fire had been made of the same Ingredients, with which Seamen use to compose that kind of Granado's, which they call *Stinkards*.

This Rage in them like *Bout-feus*.

*Bout-feus* is a French word, and therefore it were uncivil to suppose any English Person (especially of Quality) ignorant of it, or so ill-bred as to need an Exposition.

As *Indian Britains* are from *Penguins*

The *American Indians* call a great Bird they have, with a white head a *Penguin*; which signify's the same thing in the *Brittish* Tongue: From whence (with other words of the same kind) some Authors have endeavour'd to prove, That the *Americans* are originally deriv'd from the *Brittains*.

And

And though his Countrey-men the *Huns*.

This custom of the *Huns* is describ'd by *Ammianus Marcellinus*. *Hunii Semicruda cujusvis Pecoris carne vescuntur, quam inter femora sua & equorum terga subsertam, fotu calefaciunt brevi.* Pap. 686.

— He spous'd in *India*  
Of Noble House a Lady gay.

This story in *Le blanc*, of a *Bear* that married a Kings Daughter, is no more strange than many others in most Travellers, that pass with allowance, for if they should write nothing but what is possible, or probable, they might appear to have lost their labor, and observed nothing, but what they might have done as well at home.

They would not suffer the stout't Dame  
To swear by *Hercules's* Name.

The old *Romans* had particular Oaths for Men and Women to swear by, and therefore *Macrobius* says, *Viri per Castorem non jurabant antiquitus, nec Mulieres per Herculem, Ædepol autem juramentum erat tam mulieribus quam viris commune, &c.*

As stout *Armida*, bold *Thalestris*.

Two formidable Women at Arms in Romances,  
that were cudgell'd into Love by their Gallants.

Wore in their Hats like Wedding Garters.

Some few days after the King had accus'd the Five  
Members of Treason in the House of Commons;  
great crouds of the Rabble came down to *West-*  
*minster-Hall*, with Printed Copies of the Pro-  
testation, ty'd in their Hats like Favors.

Make that Sarcasinous scandal true !

Abusive, or insulting had been better, but our Knight  
believ'd the Learned Languages, more conve-  
nient to understand in, than his own Mother-  
tongue.

And is indeed the self-same case

With theirs that swore t' *Et cæteras*.

The Convocation in one of the short Parliaments  
that usher'd in the long one ( as Dwarfs are wont  
to do Knights Errant ) made an Oath to be ta-  
ken, by the Clergy, for observing of Canonical  
obedience ; in which they injoyn'd their Bre-  
thren, out of the abundance of their Consciences,  
to swear to Articles with &c. Or



Or the French League in which men vow'd,  
To fight to the last drop of Bloud.

The Holy League in *France*, design'd and made for the Extirpation of the Protestant Religion, was the Original, out of which the Solemn League and Covenant here, was (with difference only of Circumstances) most faithfully Transcrib'd. Nor did the success of both differ more than the Intent and Purpose; for after the destruction of vast numbers of People of all sorts, both ended with the Murthers of two Kings, whom they had both sworn to defend: and as our Covenanters swore every Man, to run one before another in the way of Reformation, So did the French in the Holy League, to fight to the last drop of Bloud.<sup>111</sup>

First *Trulla* stav'd, and *Cerdon* tail'd.

Staving and Tayling are terms of Art us'd in the *Bear-Garden*, and signify there only the parting of *Dogs* and *Bears*: though they are us'd Metaphorically in several other Professions, for moderating, as Law, Divinity, Hectoring, &c.



Or like the late corrected Leathern  
Ears of the Circumcised Brethren.

*Prynne*, *Bastwick*, and *Burton*, who laid down their Ears as Proxies for three Professions of the Godly Party, who not long after maintain'd their Right and Title to the Pillory, to be as good and lawful, as theirs, who first of all took possession of it in their Names.

By him that Baited the Popes Bull.

A Learned Divine in King *James's* time wrote a Polemick Work against the Pope, and gave it that unlucky Nick-Name, of *The Popes Bull Baited*.

Canonical Crabat of *Smec*.

*Smectymnus* was a Club of Parliamentary Holders-forth, The Characters of whose Names and Talents were by themselves exprest, in that senseless and insignificant word; They wore Handkerchers about their Necks for a Note of Distinction, (as the Officers of the Parliament Army then did) which afterwards degenerated into Carnal Crabats.

And

---

And leave your Vitilitigation.

Vitilitigation is a word the Knight was passionately in love with, and never fail'd to use it upon all possible occasions, and therefore to omit it, when it fell in the way, had argu'd too great a Neglect of his Learning, and Parts, though it means no more than a perverse humour of wrangling.

---

*FINIS.*

100

8 DE 58

# HUDIBRAS.

---

*The SECOND PART.*

---

By the Author of the First.

---

CORRECTED & AMENDED,

With

Several Additions and Annotations.

---

L O N D O N :

Printed by T. H. for T. Sawbridge in Little-  
Britain, R. Bentley in Russel-street in Covent-  
Garden, and G. Wells in St. Pauls  
Church-yard, 1684.

100

8 DE 58

# HUDIBRAS.

---

*The SECOND PART.*

---

By the Author of the First.

---

CORRECTED & AMENDED,

With

Several Additions and Annotations.

---

L O N D O N :

Printed by T. H. for T. Sawbridge in Little-  
Britain, R. Bentley in Russel-street in Covent-  
Garden, and G. Wells in St. Pauls  
Church-yard, 1684.



Address and Telephone

100 0 00

Printed by T. & A. N. in London  
R. & A. N. in London  
London, and in New York  
/ Printed in 1921



---

*The* SECOND PART of  
**HUDIBRAS.**

---

The Argument of the first CANTO.

---

*The Knight being clasp'd by th' heels in Prison;  
 The last unhappy Expedition,  
 Love brings his Action on the Case,  
 And lays it upon Hudibras.*

*How he receives the Ladies visit,  
 And cunningly solicits his fate,  
 Which she defers: yet on Parole,  
 Redeems him from th' Enchanted Hole.*

---

CANTO I.

---

**B**Ut now t'observe *Romantick* method,  
 Let rusty Steel a while be sheathed;  
 And all those harsh & rugged sounds  
 Of Bastinado's, Cuts, and Wounds  
 Exchang'd to Love's more gentle stile,  
 To let our Reader breathe a while:

In which, that we may be as brief as  
Is possible, by way of *Preface*.

Is't not enough to make one strange,  
That some mens fancies should ne'er change ?

But make all people do, and say,

The same things still the self-same way :

Some Writers make all *Ladies* purloin'd,

And *Knights* pursuing like a Whirlwind :

Others make all their *Knights*, in fits

Of Jealousie, to lose their wits ;

Till drawing blood o' th' Dames, like Witches,

Th'are forthwith cur'd of their Capriches.

Some always thrive in their *Amours*,

By pulling Plaisters off their Sores ;

As Cripples do to get an Alms,

Just so do they, and win their Dames.

Some force whole Regions, in despite

O' *Geography*, to change their site :

Make

Make former times shake hands with latter,  
And that that was before, come after,  
But those that write in *Rhime*, still make  
The one *Verse* for the others sake :  
For, one for *Sense*, and one for *Rhime*,  
I think's sufficient at one time.

But we forget in what sad plight  
We lately left the Captiv'd *Knight*,  
And pensive *Squire* both bruise'd in body,  
And conjur'd into safe Custody :  
Tir'd with Dispute, and speaking *Latine*,  
As well as basting, and *Bear-baiting* ;  
And desperate of any course,  
To free himself by wit or force.  
His only Solace was, That now  
His dog-bolt Fortune was so low :  
That either it must quickly end,  
Or turn about again, and mend :

In which he found th' event, no less,  
Than other times beside his guests ;  
There is a tall long-sided Dame,  
(But wondrous light) ycleped *Fame*,  
That like a thin *Camelion* boards  
Her self on Air, and eats her words :  
Upon her shoulders wings she wears,  
Like Hanging-sleeves, lin'd through with Ears,  
And Eyes, and Tongues, as Poets list,  
Made good by deep *Mythologist*.  
With these, she through the Welkin flies,  
And sometimes carries *Truth*, oft *Lies* ;  
With Letters hung like *Eastern* Pidgeons ;  
And *Mercuries* of farthest Regions ;  
*Diurnals* writ for Regulation  
Of Lying, to inform the Nation :  
And by their publick use to bring down  
The rate of *Whetstones* in the Kingdom.

About her neck a Pacquet *Male*,  
Fraught with Advice, some fresh, some stale,  
Of Men that walk'd when they were dead,  
And *Cows* of *Monsters* brought to bed :  
Of *Hailstones* big as *Pullets* Eggs,  
And Puppies whelp'd with twice two legs :  
A *Blazing-Star* seen in the *West*,  
By six or seven Men at least.

Two Trumpets she does sound at once,  
But both of clean contrary tones.  
But whether both with the same Wind,  
Or one before, and one behind,  
We know not ; only this can tell,  
Th' one sounds vilely, th' other well.  
And therefore vulgar Authors name  
Th' one good, th' other Evil *Fame*.

This tatling *Gossip* knew too well,  
What mischief *Hudibras* besel ;

And freight the spightful tidings bears,  
Of all, to th' unkind Widows Ears.  
*Democritus* ne'er laugh'd so loud  
To see *Bands* carted through the crowd,  
Or Funerals with stately Pomp,  
March slowly on in solemn dump;  
As she laugh'd out, until her back  
As well as sides, was like to crack.  
She vow'd she would go see the Sight,  
And visit the distressed *Knight*,  
To do the Office of a Neighbor,  
And be a *Gossip* at his Labor:  
And from his wooden Jail, the Stocks,  
To set at large his Fetter-locks,  
And by Exchange, Parole, or Ransome,  
To free him from th' Inchant'd Mansion.  
This b'ing resolv'd, she call'd for hood  
And Usher, Implements abroad,

Which *Ladies* wear, beside a slender  
Young waiting *Damsel* to attend her.  
All which appearing, on she went,  
To find the *Knight* in *Limbo* pent :  
And 'twas not long before she found  
Him, and his stout *Squire* in the Pound ;  
Both coupled in Enchanted Tether,  
By further Leg behind together :  
For as he fate upon his Rump,  
His Head like one in doleful dump,  
Between his knees, his hands apply'd  
Unto his Ears on either side.  
And by him, in another hole,  
Afflicted *Ralpho*, Cheek by Jowl ;  
She came upon him in his wooden  
*Magicians* Circle, on the sudden,  
As *Spirits* do, t' a Conjuror,  
When in their dreadful shapes th' appear.



No sooner did the *Knight* perceive her,  
But straight he fell into a Fever,  
Inflam'd all over with disgrace,  
To be seen by her in such a place ;  
Which made him hang the head, and scowl,  
And wink and goggle like an Owl ;  
He felt his Brains begin to swim,  
When thus the Dame accosted him ;  
This place (quoth she) they say's Inchantèd,  
And with *Delinquent Spirits* haunted;  
That here are ty'd in Chains, and scourg'd,  
Until their guilty Crimes be purg'd ;  
Look, there are two of them appear  
Like Persons I have seen somewhere :  
Some have mistaken Blocks and Posts,  
For *Spectres, Apparations, Ghosts*  
VVith Sawcer-eyes, and Horns ; and some  
Have heard the Devil beat a Drum :

But if our Eyes are not false Glasses,  
That give a wrong account of Faces ;  
That *Beard* and I should be acquainted,  
Before 'twas conjur'd and enchanted.

For though it be disfigur'd somewhat,  
As if't had lately been in Combat ;  
It did belong t' a worthy *Knight*,  
Howe'er this *Goblin* is come by't.

VWhen *Hudibras* the *Lady* heard  
To take kind notice of his *Beard*,  
And speak with such respect and honor,  
Both of the *Beard*, and the *Beard's* Owner,  
He thought it best to set as good  
A face upon it as he cou'd,  
And thus he spoke ; *Lady*, your bright  
And radiant Eyes are in the right :  
The *Beard's* th' Identique *Beard* you knew  
The same numerically true :

Nor

Nor is it worn by Fiend or Elf,  
But its Proprietor himself.

Oh Heavens ! quoth she, can that be true ?  
I do begin to fear 'tis you :

Not by your individual Whiskers,  
But by your Dialect and Discourse ;  
That never spoke to Man or Beast,  
In notions vulgarly exprest.

But what malignant Star, alas,  
Has brought you both to this sad pass ?

Quoth he, the fortune of the War,  
Which I am less afflicted for,  
Than to be seen with *Beard* and *Face*,  
By you in such a homely case.

Quoth she, those need not be ashamed,  
For being honorably maim'd ;  
If he that is in battel conquer'd,  
Have any Title to his own *Beard*.

Though

Though yours be forely lugg'd and torn,  
It does your visage more adorn,  
Than if 'twere prun'd, and starch'd, and lander'd,  
And cut square by the *Russian* Standerd,  
A torn *Beard*'s like a tatter'd Ensign,  
That's bravest which there are most rents in.  
That Petticoat about your Shoulders,  
Does not so well become a Soldiers,  
And I'm afraid they are worse handled,  
Although i'th reer your *Beard* the Van led.  
And those uneasie bruises make  
My heart for company to ake,  
To see so worshipful a friend  
I'th Pillory set, at the wrong end.  
Quoth *Hudibras*, This thing call'd *Pain*,  
(as the Learn'd *Stoicks* maintain)  
Not bad *simpliciter*, nor good,  
But merely as 'tis understood,

Sense

Sense is deceitful, and may feign,  
As well in counterfeiting pain,  
As other gross *Phænomena's*,  
In which it oft mistakes the Case.  
But since th' immortal Intellect  
(That's free from Error and Defect,  
Whose objects still persist the same)  
Is free from outward bruise or main.  
Which nought external can expose  
To gross material bangs or blows :  
It follows, we can ne'er be sure,  
Whether we pain or not endure :  
And just so far are sore and griev'd,  
As by the Fancy is believ'd.  
Some have been wounded with conceit,  
And dy'd of mere opinion freight.  
Others, though wounded sore in reason,  
Felt nor contusion nor discretion.

A *Saxon* Duke did grow so fat,  
That *Mice*, (as Histories relate)  
Eat Grots and Labyrinths to dwell in  
His Postique parts, without his feeling;  
Then how is't possible a kick,  
Should e'er reach that way to the quick?

Quoth she, I grant it is in vain  
For one that's basted, to feel pain;  
Because the *Pangs* his bones endure,  
Contribute nothing to the Cure:  
Yet *Honor* hurt is wont to rage  
With *Pain* no Med'cine can assuage.

Quoth he, That *Honor*'s very squemish  
That takes a basting for a blemish:  
For what's more honourable then *scars*,  
Or skin to tatters rent in *Wars*?  
Some have been beaten till they know  
What VVood a *Cudgel*'s of by th' blow;

Some

Some kick'd, until they can feel whether  
A Shooe be *Spanish* or *Neats-Leather* :  
And yet have met, after long running,  
With some whom they have taught that cunning,  
The furthest way about, t' o'ercome,  
I' th' end does prove th' nearest home ;  
By *Laws* of Learned *Duellists*,  
They that are bruise'd with *Wood*, or *Fists*.  
And think one beating may for once  
Suffice, are *Cowards*, and *Pultrons* :  
But if they dare engage t' a second,  
They 're *stout* and *gallant* fellows reckon'd.  
Th' old *Romans*, freedom did bestow ;  
Our *Princes* worship with a blow :  
King *Pyrrhus* cur'd his splenetick  
And testy Courtiers with a kick.  
The *Negus*, when some mighty *Lord*,  
Or *Potentate's* to be restor'd,

And



And Pardon'd for some great offence  
With which he's willing to dispence.  
First has him laid upon his *Belly*,  
Then beaten *back*, and *side*, t' a *Jelly* ;  
That done, he rises, humbly bows,  
And gives thanks for the gracious blows ;  
Departs not meanly proud, and boasting,  
Of his magnificent *Rib-Roasting*.

The beaten *Souldier*, proves most manful,  
That like his *Sword*, endures the Anvil :  
And justly's held more formidable,  
The more his *Valor's* malleable.

But he that fears a *Bastinado*,  
Will run away from his own shadow.

And though I'm now in *durance* fast,  
By our own *Party* basely cast,

*Ransome*, *Exchange*, *Parole*, refus'd,  
And worse than by th' *Enemy* us'd ;

In close *Catasta* shut, past hope  
Of *VVit*, or *Valour*, to elope,  
As *Beards*, the nearer that they tend  
To th' *Earth*, still grow more reverend :  
And *Cannons* shoot the higher pitches,  
The lower we let down their Breeches :  
I'll make this low dejected *fate*  
Advance me to a greater height.

Quoth she, Y've almost made m' in Love  
With that which did my pity move :  
Great *VVits*, and *Valors*, like great *States*,  
Do sometimes sink with their own weights :  
The extreams of *Glory*, and of *Shame*,  
Like *East* and *West*, become the same :  
No *Indian Prince* has to his *Palace*  
More follow'rs than a Theif to th' *Gallows*.  
But if a *beating* seem so brave,  
What *Glories* must a *whipping* have?

Such

Such great *Atchievements* cannot fail,  
To cast salt on a *Womans* Tail,  
For if I thought your *nat'ral Talent*  
Of *Passive Courage*, were so Gallant ;  
As you strain hard to have it thought,  
I could grow *amorous*, and *dote*.

When *Hudibras* this language heard,  
He prick'd up's ears, and strok'd his *Beard* :  
Thought he, this is the *Lucky hour*,  
*Wines* work, when *Vines* are in the flower ;  
This *Crisis* then I'll set my rest on,  
And put her boldly to the *Question*.

*Madam*, what you would seem to doubt,  
Shall be to all the world made out,  
How I've been *Drubb'd*, and with what *Spirit*,  
And *Magnanimity*, I bear it ;  
And if you doubt it to be true,  
I'll stake my *self* down against you :

And if I fail in *Love* or *Treth*,  
Be you the *Winner*, and take both.

Quoth she, I've heard old cunning *Stagers*  
Say, Fools for *Arguments* use wagers.  
And though I prais'd your *Valor*, yet  
I Did not mean to baulk your *Wit*,  
Which if you have, you must needs know  
What, I have told you before now,  
And you b' experiment have prov'd,  
I cannot *love* where I'm *belov'd*.

Quoth *Hudibras*, 'tis a *Caprich*  
Beyond th' infiction of a *Witch*;  
So Cheats to play with those still aim,  
That do not understand the Game.  
*Love* in your heart as idly burns,  
As Fire in antique *Romans-Urns*,  
To warm the *Dead*, and vainly light  
Those only, that see nothing by't.

Have

Have you not power to *entertain*,  
And render *Love* for *Love* again ?  
As *no man* can draw in his *breath*  
At once, and force out Air beneath ?  
Or do you love your self so much,  
To bear all *Rivals* else a Grutch ?  
What *Fate* can lay a greater Curse,  
Than you upon your self would force;  
For *VWedlock* without *love*, some say,  
Is but a *Lock* without a *Key*.  
It is a kind of *Rape* to *Marry*  
One, that neglects, or cares not for ye :  
For, what does make it *Ravishment*,  
But b'ing against the the *Mind's Consent* ?  
A *Rape*, that is the more inhumane,  
For being acted by a *Woman* :  
Why are you *fair*, but to entice us  
To *love* you, that you may despise us ?

But though you cannot *love*, you say,  
Out of your own *Fanatique* way,  
Why should you not, at least, allow,  
Those that *love* you, to do so too :  
For, as you fly me, and pursue  
*Love* more averſe, ſo I do you ;  
And am by your own *Doctrine* taught,  
To praſtiſe what you call a *fault*,  
Quoth ſhe, If what you ſay be true,  
You muſt fly me, as I do you ;  
But 'tis not what we do, but ſay,  
In *Love* and *Preaching*, that muſt ſway.

Quoth he, to bid me not to *love*,  
Is to forbid my *Pulſe* to move ;  
My *Beard* to grow, my *Ears* to prick up,  
Or ( when I'm in a fit ) to kick up :  
Command me to piſs out the Moon,  
And 'twill as eaſily be done.

*Loves* powr's too great to be withstood  
By feeble humane *flesh* and *blood*.

'Twas he, that brought upon his knees  
The *Heſſring* Kill-Cow *Hercules* ;

Reduc'd his *Leager-lions* skin

T' a *Pettecoat*, and made him spin :

Seiz'd on his *Club*, and made it dwindle

T' a feeble *Distaff*, and a *Spindle*.

'Twas he made *Emperors* Gallants

To their own *Sisters*, and their *Aunts* ;

Set *Popes*, and *Cardinals* agog

To play with *Pages* at Leap-frog ;

'Twas he that gave our *Senate* purges,

And fluxt the *House* of many a *Burgeſs* ;

Made thoſe that represent the *Nation*

Submit and ſuffer *amputation* :

And all the *Grandeſs* o' th' the *Cabal*,

Adjourn to *Tubs*, at *ſpring* and *fall*.



He mounted *Synod-men* and rode 'em  
To *Durty-lane*, and *little Sodom* ;  
Made 'em Corvett, like Spanish Jenets,  
And take the Ring at Madam——  
'Twas he that made *Saint Francis* do  
More than the Devil could tempt him too ;  
In cold and frosty weather grow  
Enamor'd of a Wife of *Snow* ;  
And though she were of rigid temper,  
With melting *flames* accost and tempt her ;  
Which after in *enjoyment* quenching,  
He hung a *Garland* on his *Engine*.

Quoth she, if *Love* have these effects,  
Why is it not forbid our *Sex* ?  
Why is't not damn'd, and interdicted,  
For *Diabolical* and *wicked* ?  
And song, as out of tune, against,  
As *Turk* and *Pope* are by the Saints ?

I find

I find, I've greater reason for it,  
Than I believ'd before t' abhor it.

Quoth *Hudibras*, These sad effects  
Spring from your *Heathenish* neglects  
Of *Loves* great pow'r, which he returns  
Upon your selves with equal scorns ;  
And those who worthy *Lover's* flight,  
Plague's with prepost'rous appetite ;  
This made the beautiful *Queen* of *Crete*  
To take a *Town-Bull* for her *Sweet* ;  
And from her greatness stoop so low,  
To be the Rival of a Cow.  
Others to prostitute their great *Hearts*,  
To be *Baboons*, and *Monkeys* Sweet-hearts.  
Some with the Dev'l himself in League grow  
By's Representative a *Negro* :  
'Twas this made *Vestal*-Maids love-sick,  
And venture to be bury'd Quick.

• Some

Some by their *Fathers* and their *Brothers*,  
To be made *Mistresses*, and *Mothers* :  
'Tis this that Proudest *Dames* enamors  
On *Lacquies*, and *Varlets des-Chambres*  
Their haughty *Stomachs* overcomes,  
And makes 'em stoop to Dirty *Grooms*,  
To flight the *World*, and to disparage  
*Claps*, *Issue*, *Infamy*, and *Marriage*.

Quoth she, these Judgments are severe,  
Yet such, as I should rather bear,  
Than trust men with their *Oaths*, or prove  
Their *faith*, and *secresie* in love.

Says he, their is a weighty reason,  
For *secresie* in Love as *Treason*.

Love is a *Burglarer*, a *Felon*,  
That at the *Vindore-eie* does steal in,  
To rob the the *Heart*, and with his prey  
Steals out again a closer way,

Which

Which whosoever can discover,  
He's sure (as he deserves) to suffer.  
*Love* is a fire, that burns and sparkles,  
In *Men*, as nat'rally as in *Char-coals*,  
Which sooty *Chymists* stop in holes,  
When out of Wood, they extract Coles ;  
So *Lovers*, should their *Passions* choak,  
That though they burn, they may not smoak.  
'Tis like that sturdy *Thief* that stole,  
And drag'd Beasts backwards, into's hole ;  
So *Love* does *Lovers* ; and us Men  
Draws by the Tails into his Den ;  
That no *impression* may discover,  
And trace t' his *Cave*, the wary *Lover*.  
But if you doubt I should reveal  
What you entrust me under Seal,  
I'll prove my self as close and virtuous,  
As, your own *Secretary*, *Albertus*,

Quoth

Quoth she, I grant you may be close  
In hiding what your aims propose ;  
*Love-Passions* are like *Parables*,  
By which men still mean something else :  
Though *Love* be all the worlds pretence,  
Mony's the *Mythologic* fence,  
The real substance of the shadow,  
Which all Address and Courtship's made to.

Thought he, I understand your *Play*,  
And how to quit you your own way ;  
He that will win his *Dame*, must do,  
As *Love* do's, when he bends his *Bow* :  
With the one hand thrust the *Lady* from,  
And with the other pull *her* home.  
I grant, quoth he, *Wealth* is a great  
Provocative, to am'rous heat ;  
It is all *Philters*, and high diet  
That makes *Love* Rampant, and to fly out :

'Tis

'Tis *Beauty* always in the Flower,  
That buds and blossoms at fourscore :  
'Tis that by which the *Sun* and *Moon*,  
At their own weapons are out-done ;  
That make *Knights Errant* fall in trances,  
And lay about 'em in *Romances*.

Tis *Virtue*, *VVit*, and *VVorth*, and all,  
That Men *Divine* and *Sacred* call.

For what is *VVorth* in any thing,  
But so much *Money* as 'twill bring ?

Or what but *Riches* is there known,  
Which man can solely call his own ;

In which, no *Creatures* goes his half,  
Unless it be to *squint* and *laugh* ?

I do confess, with *Goods* and *Land*,

I'd have a *Wife*, at second hand ;

And such you are : Nor is't your person,

My stomach's set so *sharp* and *fierce* on,

But

But 'tis (your better part) your *Riches*,  
That my enamor'd heart bewitches ;  
Let me your *fortune* but possess,  
And settle your person how you please :  
Or make it o'r in trust to the *Devil*,  
You'll find me *reasonable* and *Civil*.

Quoth she, I like this plainness better  
Than false *Mock-Passion*, *Speech*, or *Letter*,  
Or any feat of *qualm* or *sowning*,  
But *hanging* of your self, or *drowning* ;  
Your onely way with me, to *break*,  
Your mind, is *breaking* of your Neck :  
For as when *Merchants* break, o'rthrown  
Like *Nine-pins*, they strike others down ;  
So, that would break my *heart*, which done,  
My tempting *fortune* is your own.  
These are but trifles, ev'ry *Lover*  
Will damn himself, over and over,

And



And greater matters undertake,  
For a less worthy *Mistress* sake:  
Yet th' are the onely ways to prove  
The unfeigned *realities* of *Love*;  
For he that hangs, or beats out's brains,  
The *Devils* in him if he feigns.  
Quoth *Hudibras*, this way's too rough,  
For mere *experiment*, and *proof*;  
It is no jesting trivial matter,  
To swing in th' Air, or plunge in Water,  
And like a Water-witch, try *love*.  
That's to destroy, and not to prove:  
As if a man should be dissected,  
To find what part is disaffected:  
Your better way is to make over,  
In *Trust*, your fortune to your *Lover*;  
*Trust* is a *Tryal*, if it break,  
Tis not so desp'rate as a *Neck*:

Beside

Beside, th' *experiment*'s more certain,  
Men venture *Necks* to gain a Fortune ;  
The Soldier does it ev'ry day  
(Eight to the week) for sixpence pay :  
Your Pettifoggers damn their Souls,  
To share with Knaves in Cheating Fools :  
And Merchants vent'ring through the Main,  
Slight Pirats, Rocks and Horns for gain.  
This is the way I advise you to,  
Trust me, and see what I will do.

Quoth she, I should be leath to run  
My self all th' hazard, and you none.  
Which must be done, unless some *deed*  
Of yours, afore said do precede ;  
Give but your self one gentle *swing*,  
For tryal, and I'll cut the *string* :  
Or give that Reverend *Head*, a maul,  
Or two, or three, against a Wall ;

To shew you are a man of *Mettle*,  
And I'll engage my self, to *settle*.

Quoth he, my *Head's* not made of *brass*,  
As Frier *Bacon's* noddle was :  
Nor (like the *Indian's* scull) so tough,  
That *Authors* say, 'twas *Musket-proof* :  
As it had need to be to enter,  
As yet, on any new *Adventure* ;  
You see what *bangs* it has endur'd,  
That would, before new *feats*, be cur'd,  
But if that's all you stand upon ;  
Here strike, me *luck*, it shall be done.

Quoth she, the matter's not so far gone  
As you suppose, *Two words t' a Bargain*,  
That may be done, and time enough,  
When you have given down right proof :  
And yet 'tis no *Fantastick* pike,  
I have to *love*, nor coy *dislike* ;

'Tis no implicate nice *Aversion*  
T' your *Conversation*, *Meen*, or *Person* :  
But a just fear, lest you should prove  
False, and perfidious in *Love* ;  
For if I thought you could be *true*,  
I could *love* twice as much as you.

Quoth he, My faith as *Adamantine*  
As Chains of *Destiny*, I'll maintain ;  
True as *Apollo* ever spoke,  
Or Oracle from heart of Oak.  
And if you'll give my *flame* but vent,  
Now in close hugger-mugger pent,  
And shine upon me but benignly,  
With that one, and that other *Pigmy*,  
The *Sun* and *Day* shall sooner part,  
Than *Love*, or you, shake off my heart.  
The *Sun* that shall no more dispence  
His own, but *your* bright influence ;

I'll carve your name on *Barks* of *Trees*.  
With *True-loves knots*, and *Flourishes* ;  
That shall infuse eternal *spring*,  
And everlasting flourishing :  
Drink every Letter on't, in *Stum* ;  
And make it brisk *Champaign* become ;  
Where e'er you tread, your foot shall set  
The *Primrose* and the *Violet* ;  
All *Spices*, *Perfumes*, and *sweet Powders*,  
Shall borrow from your breath their *Odors* ;  
*Nature* her *Charter* shall renew,  
And take all *lives* of things from you ;  
The *World* depend upon your *Eye*,  
And when you frown upon it, die ;  
Only our *loves* shall still survive,  
New *Worlds* and *Natures* to out-live ;  
And, like *Heralds Moons*, remain  
All *Crescents*, without *change* or *wane*.

Hold, hold, quoth she, no more of this  
Sir *Knight*, you take your aim amiss;  
For you will find it a hard *Chapter*,  
To catch me with *Poetique Rapture*,  
In which your *Mastery of Art*,  
Doth shew it self and not your *Heart* ;  
Nor will you raise in mine *Combustion*,  
By dint of high *Heroick* fustion :  
She that with *Poetry* is won,  
Is but a *Desk* to write upon ;  
And what men say of her, they mean,  
No more than that on which they *lean*.  
Some with *Arabian Spices* strive  
To embalm her cruelly alive ;  
Or *season* her, as *French Cooks* use,  
Their *Haut-gusts*, *Buollies*, or *Ragnsts* ;  
Use her so barbarously ill,  
To grind her Lips upon a *Mill*,

Until

Until the *Facet Doublet* doth  
Fit their *Rhimes* rather than her mouth ;  
Her mouth compar'd t'an *Oyster's*, with  
A row of *Pearl* in't, stead of *Teeth* ;  
Others, make *Posses* of her *Cheeks*,  
Where *red*, and *whitest* colors mix ;  
In which the *Lilly*, and the *Rose*  
For *Indian Lake*, and *Ceruse* goes.  
The *Sun* and *Moon*, by her bright eyes,  
Eclisp'd, and darkn'd in the *skies* ;  
Are but *Black-patches* that she wears  
Cut into *Suns*, and *Moons* and *Stars*,  
By which *Astrologers*, as well  
As those in *Heav'n* above can tell  
What strange Events they do foreshow  
Unto her Under-world below.  
Her Voice the *Musick* of the *Spheres*,  
So loud it deafens mortal ears ;



As wise *Philosophers* have thought,  
And that's the cause we hear it not.  
This has been done by some, who those  
Th' ador'd in *Rhime*, would kick in *Prose*;  
And in those *Ribbins* would have hung,  
Of which melodiously they sung.  
That have the hard *fate*, to write best  
Of those still that deserve it least;  
It matters not, how *false*, or *forc't*,  
So the *best* things be said o' th' *worst*;  
It goes for nothing when 'tis sed,  
Onely the *Arrow's* drawn to th' head,  
Whether it be *Swan* or *Goose*  
They level at : So *Shepherds* use  
To set the same *mark* on the *hip*  
Both of their *sound* and *rotten Sheep*.  
For *Wits* that carry *low* or *wide*,  
Must be aim'd *higher*, or *beside*,

The *mark* which else they ne'er come nigh,  
But when they take their aim *avry*.  
But I do wonder you should chuse  
This way t' attaque me with your *Muse*,  
As one cut out to pass your tricks on,  
With *Fulhams* of *Poetic fiction* :  
I rather hop'd, I should no more  
Hear from you, o' th' *Gallanting* score :  
For hard *dry-bastings* use to prove  
The readiest Remedies of *Love*,  
Next a *dry-diet* ; But if those fail,  
Yet this uneasy Loop-hold *Jail*  
In which y' are *hamper'd* by the *fet-lock*,  
Cannot but put y' in mind of *Wedlock* :  
*Wedlock*, that's worse than any hole here,  
If that may serve you for a *Cooler* ;  
T' allay your *Mettle*, all agog  
Upon a *Wife*, the heavi'r clog.

Nor rather thank your gentle *Fate*,  
That, for a bruis'd or broken *Pate*,  
Has freed you from those *knobs*, that grow  
Much harder, on the Marry'd *Brow* :  
But if no dread can cool your *Courage*,  
From vent'ring on that *Dragon*, Marriage;  
Yet give me *Quarter*, and advance  
To nobler aims, your *Puissance* ;  
Level at *Beauty*, and at *Wit*,  
The fairest *mark* is easiest hit,

Quoth *Hudibras*, I'm before hand  
In that already, with your command :  
For where does *Beauty*, and high *Wit*,  
But in your *Constellation*, meet ?

Quoth she, What does a match imply,  
But *likeness* and *equality* ?  
I know you cannot think me fit,  
To be th' *Toke-fellow* of your *Wit* ;

Nor

Nor take one of so mean *Deserts*,  
To be the *Partner* of your *Parts* ;  
A *Grace*, which if I could believe,  
I've not the conscience to receive.

That *Conscience*, Quoth *Hudibras*,  
Is mis-inform'd ; I'll state the *Case*.

A man may be a *Legal Donor* .  
Of any thing whereof he's *Owner* ;  
And may confer it where he lists,  
I th' Judgment of all *Casuits* :  
Then *Vvit*, and *Parts*, and *Valor* may  
Be alinated, and made away,  
By those that are *Proprietors* ;  
As I may give or sell my *Horse*.

Quoth she, I grant the *Case* is true,  
And proper 'twixt your *Horse* and you ;  
But whether I may *take* , as well  
As you may *give* away or sell ?

Buyers

Buyers you know are bid beware ;  
And worse than thieves *Receivers* are.  
How shall I answer *Hue and Cry*,  
For a *Roan-Gelding*, twelve hands high :  
All spur'd and switch'd, a *Lock* on's hoof,  
A *forrel-mane*? can I bring proof,  
Where, when, by whom, and what y'are sold for,  
And in the open *Market* toll'd for?  
Or should I take you for a stray,  
You must be kept a year and day  
(Ere I can own you) here i' th' pound,  
Where, if y' are sought, you may be found :  
And in the mean time I must pay  
For all your *Provender* and *Hay*.

Quoth he, It stands me much upon  
T' *enervate* this *Objection*,  
And prove my self, by *Topic* clear,  
No *Gelding*, as you would infer.

Loss of *Virilities* averr'd

To be the cause of loss of *Beard*,

That does (like *Embryo* in the womb)

Abortive on the Chin become,

This first a *Woman* did invent,

In envy of *Mans* ornament.

*Semiramis* of *Babylon*,

Who first of all cut men o' th' *stone* :

To mar their *Beards*, and laid foundation

Of *Sow-geldering* operation.

Look on this *Beard*, and tell me whether,

*Eunuchs* were such, or *Geldings* either.

Next it appears, I am no *Horse*,

That I can argue, and discourse,

Have but two *legs*, and ne'er a *tail*.

Quoth she, that nothing will avail ;

For some *Philosophers* of late here,

Write, Men have four legs by *Nature*,

And

And that 'tis *Custom* makes them go  
Erroneously upon but two ;  
As 'twas in *Germany* made good,  
B' a Boy, that lost himself in a *Wood* ;  
And growing down t' a man, was wont  
With *Wolves* upon all four to hunt.  
As for your reasons drawn from *tayls*,  
We cannot say, they 'are true or false,  
Till you explain your self, and show,  
B' experiment, 'tis so or no.

Quoth he, 'If you'll joyn issue on't,  
I'll give you satisfactory account ;  
So you will promise, if you lose,  
To settle all, and be my *Sponse*.

That never would be done (quoth she)  
To one that wants a *Tayl*, by me :  
For *Tayls* by Natures sure were meant,  
As well as *Beards*, for ornament :

And



And though the *Vulgar* count them homely,

In *man* or *beast*, they are so comely,

So *Genteel*, *Allamode*, and handsom,

I'll never marry *man* that wants one :

And till you can demonstrate plain

You have one equal to your *Mane*,

I'll be torn piece-meal by a *Horse*,

Ere I'll take you for *better* or *worse*.

The Prince of *Cambay's* daily food,

Is *Aspe*, *Basilisque*, and *Toad*,

Which makes him have so strong a breath.

Each night he stinks a *Queen* to death;

Yet I shall rather lie in's *Arms*,

Than yours, on any other *tearms*.

Quoth he, What *Nature* can afford,

I shall produce upon my word;

And if she ever gave that *boon*

To man, I'll prove that I have one;

I mean

I mean, by *postulate Illation*,  
When you shall offer just occasion ;  
But since y' have yet deny'd to give  
My *Heart*, your *Pris'ner*, a Reprieve,  
But made it sink down to my heel,  
Let that at least your pity feel,  
And for the sufferings of your *Martyr*,  
Give its poor Entertainer *quarter* ;  
And by *Discharge*, or *Main-prise* grant  
Delivery from this base *Restraint*.

Quoth she, I grieve to see your *Leg*  
Stuck in a hole here like a *Peg*,  
And if I knew which way to do't,  
(Your *Honour* safe) I'd let you out.  
That *Dames* by *Jail-delivery*  
Of *Errant Knights* have been set free,  
When by *Enchantment* they have been,  
And sometimes for it too, laid in ;

Is that which *Knights* are bound to do  
By *Order*, *Oath*, and *Honour* too:  
For what are they *renownd* and *famous* else,  
But aiding of distress'd *Damosels*?  
But for a *Lady* no ways *Errant*,  
To free a *Knight*, we have no warrant  
In any authentical *Romance*,  
Or *Classic Author* yet of *France*:  
And I'd be loath to have you break  
An ancient *Custom* for a freak,  
Or *Innovation* introduce  
In place of things of *antique* use;  
To free your heels by any course,  
That might b' unwholesome to your *Spurs*:  
Which if I should consent unto,  
It is not in my power to do;  
For 'tis a service must be done ye,  
With solemn previous *Ceremony*.

Which

Which always has been us'd t' untie  
The *Charms* of those who here do lie ;  
Foras the *Ancients* heretofore  
To *Honor's Temple* had no dore,  
But that which thorough *Virtue's* lay ;  
So, from this *Dungeon*, there's no way  
To *honour'd freedom*, but by passing  
That other *Virtuous School of Lashing*,  
Where *Knights* are kept in narrow lists,  
With wooden *Lockets* 'bout their wrists,  
In which they for a while are *Tenants*,  
And for their *Ladies* suffer *Penance* :  
*Whipping*, that's *Virtues* Governess,  
Tutress of *Arts*, and *Sciences* ;  
That mends the gross mistakes of *Nature*,  
And puts new life into dull matter ;  
That lays foundation for *Renown*,  
And all the *honors* of the *Gown*

This

Thus suffer'd, they are set at large,  
And *freed* with honour'ble discharge ;  
Then in their *Robes* the *Penitentials*,  
Are straight presented with *Credentials*,  
And in their way attended on  
By *Magistrates* of every Town ;  
And all respect and charges paid,  
They 're to their ancient *Seats* convey'd.  
Now if you'll venture for my sake,  
To try the toughness of your *back* ,  
And suffer (as the rest have done)  
The laying of a *Whipping* on,  
(And may you prosper in your suit,  
As you with equal vigor do't)  
I here engage to be your Bail,  
And free you from th' Unknightly *Fail*.  
But since our *Sex*'s modesty  
Will not allow I should be by,

S

Bring

Bring me on *Oath*, a fair account,  
And *honor* too, when you have don't ;  
And I'll admit you to the place,  
You claim as due as in my good grace.  
If *Matrimony* and *Hanging* go  
By *Dest'ny*, why not *Whipping* too ?  
What *Med'cine* else can cure the *fits*  
Of *Lovers* when they lose their *VVits* ?  
*Love* is a *Boy*, by *Poets* styl'd,  
Then spare the *Rod*, and spill the *Child*,  
A *Persian* Emp'ror whipp'd his Grannum  
The *Sea*, his Mother *Venus* came on ;  
And hence some Rev'rend men approve  
Of *Rosemary* in making *Love*.  
As skilful *Coopers* hoop their *Tubs*  
With *Lydian* and with *Phrygian* *Dubs* ;  
Why may not *Whipping* have as good  
A grace, perform'd in *Time* and *Mood* ;

With

With comely movement, and by *Art*,  
Raife Passion in a *Lady's* heart ;  
It is an easier way, to make  
*Love* by, than that which many take.  
Who would not rather suffer *Whipping*,  
Than swallow *Toasts* of bits of *Ribbin* ?  
Make wicked *Verses*, *Treats*, and *Faces*,  
And spell Names over, with *Beer-glasses* ?  
Be under Vows to *hang* and *die*  
*Loves* Sacrifice, and all a *lie* ?  
With *China-Oranges* and *Tarts*,  
And whining *Plays*, lay baits for Hearts ?  
Bride *Chamber-maids* with *love* and *money*  
To break no Roguish *jeasts* upon ye ;  
For Lillies limn'd on *Cheeks*, and *Roses*,  
With painted perfumes, hazard *Noses* ?  
Or vent'ring to be brisk and wanton,  
Do Penance in a *Paper Lanthorn* ?



All this you may compound for, now  
 By suffering what I offer you :  
 Which is no more than has been done,  
 By *Knights* for *Ladies* long ago :  
 Did not the Great *La Mancha* do so,  
 For the *Infanta del Taboso* ?  
 Did not th' Illustrious *Bassa* make  
 Himself a *Slave* for *Miss*'s sake ?  
 And with Bulls Pizle, for her love,  
 Was taw'd as gentle as a Glove ?  
 Was not young *Florio* sent (to cool  
 His flame from *Biancasiore*) to School,  
 Where *Pedant* made his *Pathick* Bum  
 For her sake suffer *Martyrdom* ?  
 Did not a certain *Lady* whip,  
 Of late her, Husband's own Lordship ?  
 And though a Grandee of the *House*,  
 Clawd him with *Fundamental* blows,

Ty'd

Ty'd him start-naked to a Bed-post,  
And fir'd his hide as if sh' had rid post ;  
And after in the *Sessions-Court*,  
Where *Whipping's* judg'd, had *honor* for't ?  
This *swear* you will perform, and then  
I'll set you from th' *Inchanted Den*,  
And the *Magician* Circle clear.

Quoth he, I do *profess* and *swear*,  
And will perform what you enjoyn,  
Or may I never see you *mine*.

Amen (quoth she ) Then turn'd about,  
And bid her *Squire* let him out.  
But ere an *Artist* could be found  
T' undo the *Charms* another bound,  
The *Sun* grew low, and left the Skies,  
Put down (some write) by *Ladies* eyes.  
The *Moon* pul'd off her veil of Light,  
That hides her face by day from sight.

(Myſterious Veil, of brightness made,  
That's both her luſtre, and her hide)  
Aud in the Night as freely ſhon,  
As if her Rays had been her own;  
For Darkneſs is the proper Sphere,  
Where all falſe Glories uſe t' appear.  
The twinkling *Stars* began to muſter,  
And glitter with their borrow'd luſter,  
While Sleep the weary'd *World* reliev'd,  
By counterfeiting *Death* reviv'd.  
Our *Vot'ry* thought it beſt t' adjourn  
His *Whipping*-pennance till the morn,  
And not to carry on a *Work*  
Of ſuch *importance*, in the Dark,  
With erring haſte, but rather ſtay,  
And do't i' th' open face of *Day*;  
And in the mean time, go in queſt  
Of next *Retreat* to take his Reſt.

---

## CANTO II.

---

### THE A R G U M E N T.

*The Knight and Squire in hot Dispute,  
Within an Ace of falling out ;  
Are parted with a sudden fright  
Of strange Alarm, and stranger Sight ;  
With which adventuring to stickle,  
They're sent away in nasty pickle.*

---

**T**Is strange how some men's Tempers suit  
(Like Bawd and Brandee) with Dispute,  
That for their own *Opinions* stand fast,  
Only to have them claw'd and canvaſt.

That kept their *Consciences* in Cases,  
As *Fidlers* do their *Crowds* and *Bases*,  
Ne'er to be us'd but when they're bent  
To play a fit for *Argument*.  
Make *true* and *false*, *unjust* and *just*,  
Of no use but to be discusst.  
Dispute and set a *Paradox*,  
Like a strait Boot upon the Stocks,  
And stretch it more unmercifully,  
Than *Helmont*, *Mountaign*, *White*, or *Tully*.  
So th' antient *Stoicks* in their Porch,  
With fierce dispute maintain'd their *Church*,  
Beat out their Brains in fight and study,  
To prove that *Vertue* is a *Body*,  
That *Bonum* is an *Animal*,  
Made good with stout *Polemique* Brail:  
In which, some hundreds on the place  
Were slain outright, and many a face

Retrench'd of *Nose*, and *Eyes*, and *Beard*,  
To maintain what their *Sett* averr'd.  
All which the *Knight* and *Squire* in wrath  
Had like t' have suffer'd for their faith;  
Each striving to make good his own,  
As by the *sequel* shall be shown.  
The Sun had long since in the Lap  
Of *Thetis*, taken out his *Nap*,  
And like a *Lobster* boyl'd, the *Morn*  
From *black* to *red* began to turn.

When *Hudibras*, whom thoughts and aking  
Twixt sleeping kept all night, and waking,  
Began to rouse his drowse eyes,  
And from his Couch prepar'd to rise;  
Resolving to dispatch the Deed  
He vow'd to do, with trusty speed.  
But first, with knocking loud and bauling,  
He rous'd the *Squire*, in *Truckle* lolling,

And

And, after many Circumstances,  
Which vulgar *Authors* in *Romances*,  
Do use to spend their *time* and *wits* on,  
To make impertinent Description ;  
They got (with much ado) to *Horse*  
And to the *Castle* bent their Course,  
In which he to the *Dame* before  
To suffer *whipping* Duty swore :  
VWhere now arriv'd, and half unharneft,  
To carry on the work in earnest,  
He stopp'd and paus'd upon the sudden,  
And with a serious forehead plodding,  
Sprung a new Scruple in his head,  
VWhich first he scratch'd and after fed ;  
VWhether it be direct *infringing*  
An *Oath*, if I should wave this *swinging*,  
And what I've sworn to bear, forbear,  
And so b' *Equivocation* swear ;



Or whether 't be a leſſer *Sin*,  
To be forſworn, than aſt the thing,  
Are deep and ſubtle *points*, which muſt,  
T' inform my Conſcience, be diſcuſt,  
In which to *err* a little, may  
To *errors* infinite make way :  
And therefore I deſire to know  
Thy *Judgment*, ere we farther go.

Quoth *Ralpho*, ſince you do enjoyn't  
I ſhall enlarge upon the *Point* ;  
And for my own part do not doubt  
Th' *Affirmative* may be made out.  
But firſt to ſtate the *Caſe* aright,  
For beſt advantage of our light :  
And thus 'tis : VVhether 't be a *Sin*,  
To *claw* and *curry* your own *ſkin*  
Greater, or leſs, than to forbear,  
And that you are forſworn, forſwear.

But

But first, o' th' first: The *Inward man*,  
And *Outward*, like a *Clan* and *Clan*,  
Have always been at Daggers-drawing,  
And one another Clapper-clawing:  
Not that they really cuff or fence,  
But in a Spiritual *Mystique* fence,  
Which to mistake, and make 'em squabble,  
In literal fray, 's abominable;  
'Tis Heathenish, in frequent use,  
With *Pagans*, and *Apostate Jews*,  
To offer Sacrifice of *Bridewels*;  
Like modern *Indians* to their *Idols*,  
And mungrel *Christians* of our times,  
That expiate less with greater *Crimes*,  
And call the foul *Abhominations*,  
*Contrition*, and *Mortification*.  
Is't not enough w're bruis'd and kicked,  
With sinful members of the wicked;

Our Vessels, that are *sanctifi'd*,  
*Profan'd* and *curri'd*, back and side;  
 But we must claw our selves, with shameful,  
 And Heathen stripes, by their example?  
 Which (were there nothing to forbid it)  
 Is *impious* because they did it.  
 This therefore may be justly reckon'd  
 A *heinous* sin. Now to the second,  
 That *Saints* may claim a *Dispensation*  
 To *swear* and *forswear* on occasion;  
 I doubt not, but it will appear,  
 With pregnant light. The *point* is clear.  
*Oaths* are but *words*, and *words* but *wind*,  
 Too feeble implements to *bind*;  
 And hold with *deeds* proportion, so  
 As *shadows* to a *substance* do.  
 Then when they strive for *place*, 'tis fit  
 The *weaker Vessel* should submit:

Although

Although your *Church* be opposite  
To ours, as *Black Friars* are to *VWhite*,  
In *Rule* and *Order* : Yet I grant  
You are a *Reformado Saint* ;  
And what the *Saints* do claim as due,  
You may pretend a *T*itle to :  
But *Saints*, whom *Oaths* or *Vows* oblige,  
Know little of their *Priviledge* ;  
Farther (I mean) than carrying on  
Some self-advantage of their own,  
For if the *Dev'l*, to serve his turn,  
Can tell *Truth* ; why the *Saints* should scorn  
When it serves theirs, to *swear* and *lie*,  
I think, there's little reason why :  
Else h' has a greater pow'r than they,  
Which 'twere impiety to fay.  
W' are not commanded to forbear,  
Indefinitely, at all to *swear*.

But to *swear* idly ; and in vain,  
Without self-interest or gain.  
For breaking of an *Oath*, and *Lying*,  
Is but a kind of *Self-denying*,  
A *Saint-like vertue*, and from hence,  
Some have broke *Oaths* by *Providence* :  
Some, to the *Glory of the Lord*,  
*Perjur'd* themselves, and broke their word :  
And this, the constant *Rule* and *Practise*  
Of all our late *Apostles Acts* is,  
Was not the *Cause* at first begun  
With *Perjury*, and carry'd on ?  
Was there an *Oath* the *Godly* took,  
But, in due time and place, they broke ?  
Did we not bring our *Oaths* in first,  
Before our *plate*, to have them burst,  
And cast in fitter *Models*, for  
The present use of *Church* and *War* ?

Did,

Did not our *Worthies* of the *House*,  
Before they broke the *Peace*, break *Vows* ?  
For having freed us, first, from both  
Th' *Allegiance* and *Supremacy Oath*;  
Did they not, next, compell the *Nation*,  
Toake, and break the *Protestation* ?  
To *swear*, and after to *recant*,  
The *Solemn League and Covenant* ?  
To take th' *Engagement*, and disclaim it,  
Enforc'd by those, who first did frame it ?  
Did they not swear at first, to *fight*  
For the *KING's Safety*, and his *Right* ?  
And after march'd to find him out,  
And charg'd him home with *Horse* and *Foot* ?  
And yet still had the confidence,  
To swear it was in his *defence* ?  
Did they not *swear* to *live* and *die*  
With *Essex*, and streight laid him by ?

If that were all, for some have *swore*  
As false as they, if th' did no more.  
Did they not *swear* to maintain *Law*,  
In which that *swearing* made a *Flaw*?  
For *Protestant Religion Vow*,  
That did that *Vowing* disallow?  
For *Priviledge of Parliament*,  
In which that *swearing* made a *Rent*?  
And, since, of all the *three*, not one  
Is left in being, 'tis well known.  
Did they not *swear*, in exprefs words,  
To prop and back the *House of Lords*?  
And after turn'd out the whole *House-ful*  
Of *Peers*, as dang'rous, and unuseful?  
So *Cromwel* with deep *Oaths* and *Vows*,  
Swore all the *Commons* out o' th' *House*,  
Vow'd that the *Red-coats* would disband,  
I marry would they at their Command.

T

And



And tould 'em on, and *swore*, and *swore*,  
Till th' *Army* turn'd 'em out of *Door*;

This tells us plainly, what they thought,  
That *Oaths* and *swearing* goes for nought.

And that by them th' were only meant,  
To serve for an *Expedient*.

What was the *Publick Faith* found out for,  
But to flur men of what they fought for?

The *Publick Faith*, which ev'ry one  
Is bound t' observe, yet kept by none;

And if that go for nothing, why  
Should *Private Faith* have such a tye?

*Oaths* were not purpos'd more than *Law*,  
To keep the *Good* and *Just* in aw,

But to confine the *Bad* and *Sinful*,  
Like *Moral Cattle* in a *Pinfold*,

A *Saint's* of th' heavenly Realm a *Peer*:

And as no *Peer* is bound to *swear*,

But on the *Gospel* of his *Honor*,  
Of which he may dispose, as *Owner* ;  
It follows, though the thing be *forgery*,  
And false, th' affirm, it is no *perjury*,  
But a mere *Ceremony*, and a breach  
Of nothing, but a form of *speech*,  
And goes for no more when 'tis took,  
Than mere *saluting* of the *Book*.

Suppose the *Scriptures* are of force,  
They 're but *Commissions* of Course,  
And *Saints* have freedom to digress,  
And vary from 'em as they please ;  
Or misinterpret them, by *private*  
*Instructions*, to all *Aims* they drive at ;  
Then why should we our selves *abridge*  
And *Curtail* our own *Privilege* ?  
*Quakers* (that like to *Lanthorns*, bear  
Their light within 'em) will not *swear*.

— — — — —  
Their Gospel is an *Accidence*,  
By which they construe *Conscience*,  
And hold no *sin* so deeply red,  
As that of breaking *Priscian's* head ;  
(The *Head* and *Founder* of their *Order* ,  
That stirring *Hats* held worse than murder.)  
These thinking th' are obliged to *Troth*  
In *swearing*, will not take an *Oath* ;  
Like Mules, who if th' have not their will  
To keep their own pace, stand stock still ;  
But they are weak, and little know  
What Free-born *Consciences* may do,  
'Tis the *temptation* of the Devil,  
That makes all humane actions evil :  
For *Saints* may do the same things by  
The *Spirit*, in Sincerity,  
Which other men are tempted to,  
And at the Devils instance do ;

And

And yet the Actions be contrary,  
Just as the *Saints* and *Wicked* vary.  
For as on land there is no *Beast*,  
But in some *Fish* at Sea's exprest;  
So in the *Wicked* there's no *Vice*,  
Of which the *Saints* have not a spice;  
And yet that thing that's *pious* in  
The one, in th' other is a *Sin*.  
Is't not *Ridiculous*, and *Nonsense*,  
A *Saint* should be a slave to *Conscience*?  
That ought to be above such Fancies,  
As far, as above *Ordinances*.  
She's of the *Wicked*, as I guess,  
B' her *looks*, her *language*, and her *dress*,  
And though, like *Constables*, we search  
For false Wares, one anothers *Church*:  
Yet all of us hold this for true,  
*No Faith is to the wicked due*;

For *Truth* is *Precious* and *Divine*,  
Too rich a *Pearl* for *Carnal Swine*.

Quoth *Hudibras*, All this is true,  
Yet 'tis not fit that all men knew  
Those *Mysteries* and *Revelations* ;  
And therefore *Topical* *Evasions*  
Of subtle *Turns*, and *Shifts* of *fence*,  
Serve best with th' *VVicked* for pretence,  
Such as the learned *Jesuits* use,  
And *Presbyterians*, for excuse,  
Against the *Protestants*, when th' happen  
To find their *Churches* taken napping.  
As thus : A breach of *Oath* is *Duple*,  
And either way admits a *scruple*,  
And may be *ex parte* of the *Maker*,  
More criminal, than the injur'd *Taker*.  
For he that strains too far a *Vow*,  
Will break it like an o'er-bent *Bow* :

And

And he that made, and forc'd it, broke it,  
Not he that for convenience took it :  
A broken Oath is, *quatenus* Oath,  
As found t' all purposes of *Troth*,  
As broken *Laws* are ne'er the worse,  
Nay till th' are broken, have no force,  
What's *Justice* to a man, or *Laws*,  
That never comes within their Claws?  
They have no pow'r, but to admonish,  
Cannot controul, coerce, or punish,  
Until they're broken, and then touch  
Those only that do make them such.  
Beside, no *Engagement* is allow'd,  
By men in *Prison* made, for Good;  
For when they're set at *liberty*,  
They're from th' *Engagement* too, set free :  
The Rabbins write, when any *Jew*  
Did make to God, or *Man*, a *Vow*,

Which afterward he found untoward,  
 And stubborn to be kept, or too hard ;  
 Any three other *Jews* o' th' *Nation*,  
 Might free him from the *Obligation* :  
 And have not two *Saints* pow'r to use  
 A greater *priviledge* than three *Jews* ?  
 The *Court of Conscience*, which in *Man*  
 Should be *supream* and *Sovereign*,  
 Is't fit, should be *subordinate*  
 To ev'ry petty *Court* i' th' *State*,  
 And have less Power than the *lesser*,  
 To deal with *Perjury* at pleasure ?  
 Have it's proceedings disallow'd, or  
 Allow'd, at fancy of *Py-powder* ?  
 Tell all it does, or does not know,  
 For swearing *ex Officio* ?  
 Be forc'd t' impeach a broken hedge,  
 And *Pigs* unring'd at *Vis. Frano. Pledge*.

Discover



Discover *Thieves*, and *Bawds*, *Recusants*,  
*Priests*, *Witches*, *Eves-droppers*, and *Nuisance* ;  
Tell who did play at Games unlawful,  
And who fill'd *Pots* of *Ale* but half full.  
And have no pow'r at all, nor shift,  
To help it self at a dead lift ?  
Why should not *Conscience* have *Vacation*,  
As well as other Courts o' th' Nation ?  
Have equal power to adjourn  
Appoint *Appearance* and *Retorn* ?  
And make as nice distinctions serve  
To split a *Case* ; as those that carve  
Invoking *Cuckolds* names, hit joynts,  
Why should not tricks as flight, do points ?  
Is not the *High-Court* of *Justice* sworn  
To judge that Law that serves their turn ?  
Make their own *Jealousies* *High-Treason*,  
And fix 'em whomso'er they please on ?

Cannot

Cannot the *Learned Council* there,  
 Make Laws in any shape appear?  
 Mould 'em as *Witches* do their Clay,  
 When they make *Pictures* to destroy?  
 And vex 'em into any form,  
 That fits their purpose to do harm?  
 Rack 'em until they do confess,  
 Impeach of *Treason*, whom they please,  
 And most perfidiously condemn,  
 Those that engag'd their *Lives* for them?  
 And yet do nothing in their own fence,  
 But what they ought by *Oath* and *Conscience*!  
 Can they not juggle, and, with slight  
 Conveyance, play with *wrong* and *right*;  
 And sell their blasts of wind as dear,  
 As *Lapland Witches* bor'd *Air*?  
 Will not *Fear*, *Favour*, *Bribe*, and *Grutch*,  
 The same *Cause* several ways adjudge;

As Seamen with the self-same Gale  
Will sev'ral different courses sail ;  
As when the Sea breaks o'er its bounds,  
And overflows the level grounds ;  
Those *Banks* and *Dams*, that like a *Screen*,  
Did keep it out, now keep it in :  
So when *Tyrannical Usurpation*  
Invades the freedom of a *Nation*,  
The Laws o' th' Land that were intended  
To keep it out, are made defend it.  
Do's not in *Chanc'ry* ev'ry man *swear*,  
What makes best for him in his Answer ?  
Is not the winding up *Witnesses*,  
And nicking more than half the bus'ness ?  
For *Witnesses*, like *Watches*, go  
Just as they're set, too fast or slow.  
And where in *Conscience*, th' are strait lac'd ;  
Tis ten to one, that side is cast.

Do

Do not your *Juries* give their *Verdict*  
As if they felt the *Cause*, not heard it?  
And as they please make *Matter of Fact*  
Run all on one side, as th' are packt?  
Nature has made Mans breast no *Windores*,  
To publish what he does within doors?  
Nor what dark secrets there inhabit,  
Unless his own rash folly blob it.  
If *Oaths* can do a man no good,  
In his own bus'ness, why they shou'd  
In other matters do him hurt,  
I think there's little reason for't.  
He that imposes an *Oath*, makes it,  
Not he, that for convenience takes it:  
Then how can any man be said  
To break an *Oath* he never made?  
These *Reasons* may perhaps look odly  
To th' *Wicked*, though they evince the *Godly*;

But

But if they will not serve to clear  
My *Honor*, I am ne'er the near.  
*Honor* is like that glassy Bubble  
That finds *Philosophers* such trouble,  
Whose least part crackt, the whole does fly,  
And *VVits* are crack'd, to find out why:

Quoth *Ralpho*, *Honor's* but a Word,  
To swear by only, in a *Lord*:  
In other men 'tis but a Huff,  
To vapour with, instead of Proof,  
That like a *VVen*, looks big, and swels,  
Is senseless, and just nothing else.

Let it (quoth he) be what it will,  
It has the *VVorld's* opinion still,  
But as men are not *VVise* that run  
The slightest *hazard* they may shun:  
There may a *Medium* be found out  
To clear to all the *VVorld* the doubt;

And

And that is, if a man may do't  
By *Proxy* whipt, or Substitute.

Though nice, and dark the *Point* appear,  
(Quoth *Ralph*) it may hold up and clear.

That *Sinners* may supply the place  
Of suff'ring *Saints* is a plain *Case*.

*Justice* gives *Sentence*, many times,  
On one man for another's *Crimes*:

Our Brethren of *New-England* use

Choice *Malefactors* to excuse,

And hang the *Guiltless* in their stead,

Of whom the *Churches* have less need.

As lately 't happend: in a *Town*,

There liv'd a *Cobler*, and but one,

That out of *Doctrine* could cut *Use*,

And mend mens *Lives* as well as *Shoes*:

This precious *Brother* having slain,

In times of *Peace*, an *Indian*;

(Not out of *Malice*, but mere *Zeal*,  
Because he was an *Infidel*)  
The mighty *Tottipottymoy*  
Sent to our *Elders* an *Envoy*,  
Complaining sorely of the *Breach*,  
Of *League*, held forth by Brother *Patch*,  
Against the *Articles* in force  
Between both *Churches*, his, and ours :  
For which he crav'd the *Saints* to render  
Into his hands, or hang th' *Offender* :  
But they maturely having weigh'd,  
They had no more but him o' th' *Trade*,  
(A man, that serv'd them in a double  
Capacity, to *Teach* and *Cobble*)  
Resolv'd to spare him, yet to do  
The *Indian Hoghan Moghan* too  
Impartial justice, in his stead did  
Hang an old *Weaver* that was Bed-rid.

Then



Then wherefore may not you be skip'd,  
And in your room another whip'd:  
For all *Philosophers*, but the *Sceptick*,  
Hold *Whipping* may be *Sympathetick*.

It is enough, quoth *Hudibras*,  
Thou hast resolv'd, and clear'd the *Case*,  
And canst in *Conscience*, not refuse,  
From thy own *Doctrine*, to raise *Use*:  
I know thou wilt not (for my sake)  
Be tender-Conscienc'd of thy back:  
Then strip thee of thy Carnal *Jerkin*,  
And give thy *outward-fellow* a ferking:  
For when thy *Vessel*, is new hoop'd,  
All Leaks of *sinning* will be stop'd.

Quoth *Ralpho*, You mistake the matter,  
For in all *Scruples* of this Nature,  
No man includes himself, nor turns  
The *Point* upon his own Concerns.

As no man of his own self catches  
The *Itch*, or amorous *French Aches* :  
So no man does himself convince  
By his own *Doctrine* of his *Sins*.  
And though all cry down *Self*, none means  
His own self in a *literal Sence*.  
Beside, it is not only *Foppish*,  
But *Vile*, *Idolatrous*, and *Popish*,  
For one man, out of his own Skin,  
To frisk and whip another's *Sin* :  
As *Pedants* out of *School-boys* breeches,  
Do claw and curry their own itches.  
But in this Case it is profane,  
And sinful too, because in vain :  
For we must take our *Oaths* upon it,  
You did the *deed*, when I have done it.

Quoth *Hudibras*, That's answer'd soon ;  
Give us the *Whip*, we'll lay it on.

U

Quoth

Quoth *Ralpho*, That we may fwear true,  
'Twere properer that I whip'd you :  
For when with your consent 'tis done,  
The *Act* is really your own.

Quoth *Hudibras*, It is in vain  
(I see) to argue 'gainst the grain ;  
Or, like the Stars, incline men to,  
What they're averse themselves to do,  
For when *Disputes* are wear'd out,  
'Tis *Interest* still resolves the doubt.  
But since no reason can confute ye,  
I'll try to force you to your *Duty* ;  
For so it is, how e'er you mince it,  
As ere we part I shall evince it,  
And *curry* (if you stand out) whether  
You will or no, your *stubborn Leather*.  
Canst thou refuse to bear thy part,  
P' th' publick *Work* , base as thou art ?

To higgle thus, for a few blows,  
To gain thy *Knight* an opulent *Spouse*,  
Whose *wealth* his *bowels* yern to purchase,  
Merely for th' interest of the *Churches*;  
And when he has it in his claws,  
Will not be hide-bound to the *Cause*;  
Nor shalt thou find him a *Curmudgin*,  
If thou dispatch it without grudging:  
If not, resolve before we go,  
That you and I must pull a Crow.

Y' had best (quoth *Ralpho*) as the *Antients*  
Say wisely, *Have a care 'o th' main chance*,  
*And look before you ere you leap*;  
*For, as you sow, you are like to reap*.  
And were y' as good as *George a Green*,  
I shall make bold to turn agen;  
Nor am I doubtful of the *Issue*  
In a just *Quarrel*; and mine is so.

Is't fitting for a man of *Honor*,  
To whip the *Saints* like Bishop *Bonner*,  
A *Knight* t' usurp the *Beadles* Office,  
For which y' are like to raise brave *Trophies*?  
But I advise you (not for fear,  
But for your own sake) to forbear,  
And for the *Churches*, which may chance  
From hence, to spring a variance;  
And raise among themselves new *Scruples*,  
Whom common danger hardly couples.  
Remember how in *Arms* and *Politicks*,  
We still have worsted all your holy *Tricks*.  
*Trappan'd* your party with *Intregue*,  
And took your *Grandees* down a peg,  
*New-modell'd* th' *Army*, and *cashier'd*  
All that to *Legion S M E C* adher'd,  
Made a mere *Utenfil* o' your *Church*  
And after left it in the lurch,

A Scaffold to build up our own,  
And when w' done with 't, pull'd it down,  
O'er reach'd your *Rabbins* of the *Synod*,  
And snap'd their *Cannons* with a *Why-not*.  
(Grave *Synod-men* that were rever'd  
For follid Face and depth of *Beard*)  
Their *Classique-model* prov'd a Maggot,  
Their *Directory* and *Indian Pagod*.  
And drown'd their *Discipline* like a Kitten,  
On which th' had been so long a fitting ;  
Decry'd it as a *Holy Cheat*,  
Grown out of Date, and Obsolete,  
And all the *Saints* o' the first Grass,  
As casting *Foles* of *Balam's Ass*.

At this the *Knight* grew high in Chafe,  
And staring furiously on *Ralph*,  
He trembl'd and lookt pale with ire,  
Like Ashes first, then Red as Fire.

Have I (quoth he) been ta'en in fight,  
And for so many *Moons* lay'n by't ;  
And when all other means did fail,  
Have been exchang'd for *Tubs* of *Ale* :  
Not but they thought me worth a *Ransom*,  
Much more considerable and handsom,  
But for their own sakes, and for fear,  
They were not safe, when I was there ?  
Now to be baff'd by a *Scoundrel*,  
An upstart *Sec't'ry* and a *Mungrel*,  
Such as breed out of peccant humors  
Of our own *Church*, like *VVens*, and *Tumors*  
And like a *Maggot* in a *Sore*,  
Would that which gave it life, devour :  
It never shall be done, nor said :  
With that he seiz'd upon his *Blade*.  
And *Ralpho* too, as quick and bold,  
Upon his *Basket hilt* laid hold,



With equal readines prepar'd  
To draw, and stand upon his Guard,  
When both were parted on the sudden,  
With hideous *clamour*, and a loud one,  
As of all sorts of *Noise* had been  
Contracted into one loud *Din* ;  
Or that some Member to be chosen,  
Had got the *Odds* above a *Thousand* ;  
And by the greatness of his noise,  
Prov'd fittest for his *Countreys* choice.  
This strange surprisal put the *Knight*,  
And wrathful *Squire* into a fright ;  
And though they stood prepar'd, with fatal,  
Impetious rancour, to joyn *Battle* ;  
Both though it was their wisest course,  
To wave the Fight, and mount to *Horse* ;  
And to secure, by swift retreating,  
Themselves from danger of worse *beating*.

Yet neither of them would disparage,  
By utt'ring of his mind, his Courage,  
Which made 'em stoutly keep their ground  
With horror and disdain, wind-bound.  
And now the cause of all their *fear*,  
By slow degrees approach'd so near,  
They might distinguish diff'rent noise  
Of *Horns*, and *Pans*, and *Dogs*, and *Boys*,  
And *Kettle Drums*, whose fullen *Dub*  
Sounds like the hooping of a *Tub* :  
But when the Sight appear'd in view,  
They found it was an antique Show,  
A *Triumph*, that for *Pomp*, and *State*,  
Did proudest *Romans* emulate ;  
For as the *Aldermen* of *Rome*  
For foes at training overcome,  
And not enlarging *Territory*,  
(As some mistaken write in *Story*)

Being

Being mounted in their best Aray,  
Upon a *Carre*, and who but they?  
And follow'd with a world of *Tall Lads*,  
That merry *Ditties* trol'd, and *Ballads* ;  
Did ride, with many a good morrow,  
Crying, *hey for our Town* through the *Burrough* :  
So when this *Triumph* drew so nigh,  
They might particulars descry,  
They never saw two things so Pat,  
In all respects, as this, and that.  
First he that led the *Cavalcate*,  
Wore a Sowgelders *Flagellate*,  
On which he blew so strong a *Levet*,  
As well feed'd *Lawyer* on his *Breviate*.  
When over one another's heads,  
They charge (three Ranks at once) like Swedes  
Next *Pans*, and *Kettles* of all keys,  
From *Trebles* down to *double-base*,

And

And, after them upon a *Nag*,  
That might pass for a forehand Stag,  
A *Cornet* rode, and on his Staff,  
A Smock display'd, did proudly wave,  
Then *Bagpipes* of the loudest Drones,  
With snuffing broken-winded tones ;  
Whose blasts of Air in Pockets shut,  
Sound filthier than from the Gut,  
And make a viler noise than *Swine*  
In windy-weather, when they whine.  
Next, one upon a pair of *Panniers*,  
Full fraught with that, which for good manners  
Shall here be nameless, mixt with *Grains*  
Which he dispenc'd among the *Swains*,  
And busily upon the Crowd,  
At random round about bestow'd.  
Then mounted on a horned *Horse*,  
One bore a *Gauntlet* and *Gilt-spurs*.

Ty'd to the *Pummel* of a long *Sword*  
He held reverse the point turn'd downward.  
Next after, on a raw-bon'd Steed,  
The Conqueror's *Standard-bearer* rid,  
And bore aloft before the *Champion*  
A *Petticoat* display'd, and Rampant;  
Near whom the *Amazon* triumphant,  
Besrid her *Beast*, and on the *Rump* on't  
Sate face to *Tayl*, and *Bum* to *Bum*,  
The *Warrier* whilome overcome;  
Arm'd with a *Spindle* and a *Distaff*,  
Which as he rode, she made him twist off;  
And when he loiter'd, o'er her Shoulder,  
Chastiz'd the *Reformado* Souldier.  
Before the *Dame*, and round about,  
March'd *Whiflers*, and *Staffiers* on foot,  
With *Lacquies*, *Grooms*, *Valets* and *Pages*,  
In fit and proper equipages;

Or.

Of whom, some Torches bore, some Links,  
Before the proud *Virago-Minx*,  
That was both *Madam*, and a *Don*,  
Like *Nero's Sporus*, or *Pope Joan* ;  
And at fit Periods the whole Rout  
Set up their throats with clam'rous shout.  
The *Knight* transported, and the *Squire*  
Put up their Weapons, and their Ire ;  
And *Hudibras*, who us'd to ponder  
On such Sights, with judicious wonder,  
Could hold no longer to impart  
His *Animadversions*, for his Heart.

Quoth he, In all my life till now,  
I ne'er saw so prophane a *Show*.  
It is a *Paganish* invention,  
Which *Heathen* writers often mention :  
And he, who made it, had read *Goodwin*  
(I warrant him) and understood him :

With

With all the Grecians *Speeds* and *Stows* :  
That best describe those Antient Shows,  
And has observ'd all fit *Decorums*,  
We find describ'd by old *Historians*.  
For as a *Roman Conqueror*,  
That put an end to forraign *War*,  
Ent'ring the Town in Triumph for it,  
Bore a Slave with him, in his Chariot :  
So this insulting *Female Brave*  
Carries behind her here, a *Slave*,  
And as the *Antients* long ago, •  
When they in field defy'd the foe,  
Hung out their *Mantles della Guer* ;  
So her proud *Standard-bearer* here,  
Waves, on his Spear, in dreadful manner,  
A *Tyrian-Petticoat* for a *Banner* :  
Next Links, and Torches, heretofore  
Still born before the *Emperor* :

And



And as in *Antique Triumphs*, Eggs  
 Were born for mystical intregues ;  
 There's one in Truncheon, like a Ladle,  
 That carries Eggs too, fresh or adle ;  
 And still at random, as he goes,  
 Among the Rabble-rout bestows.

Quoth *Ralpho*, You mistake the matter ;  
 For, all th' *Antiquity* you smatter,  
 Is but a *Riding*, us'd of course,  
 VVhen the *Grey Mares* the better *Horse*.  
 VVhen o'er the Breeches greedy *Women*  
 Fight, to extend their vast *Dominion*,  
 And in the cause impatient *Grizel*  
 Has drubb'd her Husband with *Bulls-Pizle*,  
 And brought him under *Covert-Baron*,  
 To turn her *Vassail* with a *Murrain* ;  
 VVhen *Wives* their Sexes shift, like *Hares*  
 And ride their *Husbands*, like *Night-Mares*,

And they in mortal *Battle* vanquish'd,  
Are of their *Charter* dis-enfranchis'd,  
And by the right of *War*, like *Gills*,  
Condemn, to *Distaff*, *Horns*, and *Wheels*;  
For when men by their *Wives* are Cow'd,  
Their *Horns* of course are understood,  
Quoth *Hudibras*, Thou still giv'st sentence  
Impertinently, and against sence.  
Tis not the least disparagement,  
To be defeated by th' event :  
Not to be beaten by main *force*,  
That does not make a man the worse,  
Although his shoulders, with *Batoon*,  
Be claw'd and cudgell'd to some tune ;  
A *Taylor's* Prentice has no hard  
Measure, that's bang'd with a true yard :  
But to turn *Tail*, or run away,  
And without blows give up the Day ;

Or

Or to surrender ere the *Assault*,  
That's no man's fortune, but his fault :  
And renders men of *Honor* less  
Than all th' *Adversity* of Success,  
And only unto such this Shew  
Of *Horns*, and *Petticoats*, is due.  
There is a lesser *Profanation*,  
Like that the *Romans* call'd *Ovation*.  
For as *Ovation* was allow'd  
For *Conquest*, purchas'd without blood,  
So men decree those lesser Shows,  
For *VicPry* gotten without blows.  
By dint of sharp hard words, which some  
Give *Battle* with, and overcome ;  
These mounted in a *Chair Curule*,  
VWhich *Moderns* call a *Cucking-stool*,  
March proudly to the River's side,  
And o'er the *Waves* in *Triumph* ride.  
Like Dukes of *Venice*, who are fed

The *Adriatique Sea* to wed,  
 And have a gentler *Wife*, than those,  
 For whom the *State* decrees those *Shows*.  
 But both are *Heathenish* and come  
 From th' *Whores* of *Babylon* and *Rome*,  
 And by the *Saints* should be withstood,  
 As *Antichristian* and *Lewd*,  
 And we, as such, should now contribute  
 Our utmost *struglings* to prohibit.

This said, they both advanc'd, and *rod*,  
 A *Dog-trot* through the bawling *Crowd*,  
 To attack the *Leader*, and still prest,  
 Till they approach'd him *breast to breast*.  
 Then *Hudibras*, with face and hand,  
 Made signs for *Silence*; which obtain'd:  
 What means (quoth he) this dev'l's *Procession*?  
 With men of *Orthodox* profession?  
 'Tis *Ethnique* and *Idolatrous*,  
 From *Heathenism* deriv'd to us.

Does not the Whore of *Babylon* ride  
Upon her *Horned Beast* astride,  
Like this proud *Dame*, who either is  
A Type of her, or she of this ?  
Are things of Superstitious *function*,  
Fit to be us'd in *Gospel Sunshine* ?  
It is an *Antichristian Opera*,  
Much us'd in midnight times of *Popery* ;  
A running after self-inventions  
Of wicked and profane *Intentions* ;  
To scandalize that *Sex*, for scolding,  
To whom the *Saints* are so beholding,  
Women, who were our first *Apostles*,  
Without whose aid w' had all been lost else ;  
*Women*, that left no stone unturn'd,  
In which the *Cause* might be concern'd :  
Brought in their Childrens *Spoons* and *Whistles*,  
To purchase *Swords*, *Carbines*, and *Pistols* :

Their

Their *Husbands, Cullies, and Sweet-hearts*;  
To take the *Saints and Churches* parts;  
Drew several gifted *Bretbren* in,  
That for the *Bishops* would have been,  
And fix'd them constant to the *Party*,  
With motives pow'rful and hearty:  
Their *Husbands* rob'd, and made hard shifts  
T'administer unto their *Guists*;  
All they could rap, and run and pilfer,  
To scraps, and ends of Gold and Silver;  
Rub'd down the *Teachers*, tir'd and spent,  
With holding forth for *Parliament*;  
Pamper'd and edify'd their *Zeal*  
With *Marrow-puddings* many a Meal;  
Enabled them, with store of meat,  
On controverted *Points* to eat;  
And cram'd them till their *guts* did ake,  
With *Cawdle, Custard, and Plum-cake*.

What have they done, or what left undone,  
That might advance the *Cause* at *London* ?  
March'd rank and file, with *Drum* and *Ensign*,  
T' entrench the *City*, for defence, in ;  
Rais'd *Rampiers* with their own soft hands,  
To put the *Enemy* to stands ;  
From *Ladies* down to *Oyster-Wenches*,  
Labour'd like *Pioneers* in *Trenches*,  
Fell to their *Pick-Axes* and *Tools*,  
And help'd the men to dig like *Moles* ?  
Have not the *Handmaids* of the *City*,  
Chosen o' their *Members* a *Committee* ?  
For raising of a *Common-Purse*,  
Out of their *Wages*, to raise *Horse* ?  
And do they not as *Triers* fit,  
To judge what *Officers* are fit ?  
Have they —— ? At that at an *Egg*, let fly,  
Hit him directly o'er the eye,

And



And running down his Cheek, besmear'd,  
With Orange-tawny-slime, his *Beard* :  
But *Beard*, and slime being of one Hue,  
The wound the less appear'd in view.  
Then he that on the *Panniers* rode,  
Let fly o' th' other side a load ;  
And quickly charg'd again, gave fully  
In *Ralpho's* face, another *Volley*.  
The *Knight* was startl'd with the smell,  
And for his Sword began to feel :  
And *Ralpho* smother'd with the stink,  
Grasp'd his : when one that bore a *Link*,  
O' th' sudden, clap'd his flaming Cudgel,  
Like *Linstock*, to the Horse's touch-hole ;  
And streight another with his *Flambeaux*,  
Gave *Ralpho's*, o'er the eyes, a damn'd blow,  
The *Beasts* began to kick, and fling,  
And forc'd the Rout to make a Ring.

Through which they quickly broke their way,  
And brought them off from further fray;  
And though disorder'd in Retreat,  
Each of them stoutly kept his seat:  
For quitting both their *Swords* and *Rains*,  
They grasp'd with all their strength the *manes*;  
And to avoid the foes pursuit,  
With spurring put their Cattle to't,  
And till all four were out of wind,  
And danger too, ne'r look't behind.  
After th' had paus'd a while, supplying  
Their *spirits* spent with fight and flying,  
And *Hudibras* recruited force,  
Of Lungs, for *action* or *discourse*:

Quoth he, that man is sure to lose,  
That fouls his *hands* with durty foes:  
For where no *honor's* to be gain'd,  
\*Tis thrown away in being maintain'd,

\*Twas

,Twas ill for us we had to do  
With so dishonorable a Foe:  
For though the *Law of Arms* does bar  
The use of venom'd shot in *War*,  
Yet by the nauseous smell, and noisom,  
Their *Casse-shot* favours strong of *poison*;  
And doubtless have been chew'd with teeth  
Of some that had a *stinking breath*:  
Else when we put it to the push,  
They had not giv'n us such a brush.  
But as those *Pultrons* that fling dirt,  
Do but defile, but cannot hurt;  
So all the *Honor* they have won,  
Or we have lost, is much at one.  
'Twas well we made so resolute  
A brave Retreat, without pursuit;  
For if we had not, we had sped  
Much worse, to be in Triumph led;

Than which, the *Ancients* held no state,  
Of Man's life more unfortunate.  
But if this bold *Adventure* e'er  
Do chance to reach the *Widows* ear,  
It may, b'ing destin'd to assert  
Her *Sex's Honor*, reach her heart.  
And as such homely *Treats* (they say)  
Portend good *Fortune*, so this may.  
*Vespasian* being dawb'd with dirt,  
Was destin'd to the Empire for't:  
And from a *Scavenger* did come  
To be a mighty Prince in *Rome*:  
And why may not this foul *Address*  
Presage in Love the same success?  
Then let us streight to cleanse our wounds,  
Advance in quest of nearest *Ponds*;  
And after (as we first *design'd*)  
Swear I've perform'd what she enjoin'd.

CANTO III.

THE  
A R G U M E N T.

*The Knight with various doubts possest  
To win the Lady, goes in Quest  
Of Sidrophel the Rosy-crucian,  
To know the Destinies Resolution;  
With whom being met, they both chop Logick  
About the Science Astrologick.  
Till falling from Dispute, to Fight,  
The Conjuror's worsted by the Knight.*

**D**Oubtleſs the pleaſure is as great  
Of being cheated, as to cheat.

As lookers-on feel moſt delight,  
That leaſt perceive a Jugglers ſlight;  
And ſtill the leſs they underſtand,  
The more th' admire his ſlight of hand.

Some

Some with a noise, and greasie light,  
Are snapt, as men catch *Larks* by night;  
Ensnar'd and hamper'd by the *Saul*,  
As Noozes by the *legs* catch *Foul*.

Some with a *Med'cine*, and *Receipt*,  
Are drawn to nibble at the *Bait*;  
And though it be a two-foot *Trout*,  
'Tis with a single hair pull'd out.

Others believe no *Voice* t' an *Organ*;  
So sweet as *Lawyer* in his *Bar-gown*.  
Until, with subtle *Cobweb-cheats*,  
Th' are catch'd in knotted *Law*, like *Nets*;  
In which, when once they are imbrangled,  
The more they stir, the more th're tangled;  
And while their *Purses* can dispute,  
There's no end of th' immortal *Suit*.

Others still gape t' anticipate  
The Cabinet designs of *Fate*,



Apply to *Wizards* to fore-see  
What shall, and what shall never be:  
And as those *Vulturs* do forebode,  
Believe Events prove *bad*, or *good*.  
A flamm more senseless than the Roguery  
Of old *Auruspicy* and *Augury*.  
That out of *Garbages* of *Cattle*,  
Presag'd th' events of *Truce*, or *Battle*;  
From flight of *Birds*, or *Chickins* pecking,  
Success of great'st attempts would reckon,  
Though *Cheats*, yet more intelligible,  
Than those that with the *Stars* do fribble.  
This *Hudibras* by proof found true,  
As in due time and place we'll shew.  
For He, with *Beard* and *Face* made clean,  
Being mounted on his *Steed* agen,  
(And *Ralpho* got a Cock-horse too  
Upon his *Beast*, with much ado)



Advanc'd on for the *Widows* house,  
 To acquit himself and pay his *Vows*;  
 When various *thoughts* began to bustle,  
 And with his inward man to juggle.  
 He thought what *danger* might accrue,  
 If she should find he *swore* untrue:  
 Or, if his *Squire*, or he should fail,  
 And not be punctual in their *Tale*;  
 It might at once the ruine prove  
 Both of his *Honor*, *Faith*, and *Love*;  
 But if he should forbear to go,  
 She might conclude h' had broke his *Vow*;  
 And that he durst not now for shame  
 Appear in *Court* to try his *Claim*.  
 This was the Pen'worth of his *thought*,  
 To pass *time*, and uneasy *trot*.

Quoth he, in all my past *Adventures*,  
 I ne'er was set so on the *Tenters*,

Or taken tardy with *Dilemmas*,  
 That, every way I turn, does hem me;  
 And with inextricable doubt,  
 Befets my puzzled *Wits* about:  
 For though the *Dame* has been my Bail,  
 To free me from enchanted *Jail*:  
 Yet as a *Dog* committed close  
 For some offence, by chance breaks loose,  
 And quits his *Clog*; but all in vain,  
 He still draws after him his *Chain*.  
 So though my *Ankle* she has quitted,  
 My *Heart* continues still committed.  
 And like a *Bayl'd* and *Mainpriz'd* *Lover*,  
 Although at large, I am bound over.  
 And when I shall appear in *Court*,  
 To plead my *Cause*, and answer for't  
 Unless the *Judge* do partial prove,  
 What will become of *Me* and *Love*?

For,

For, if in our account we vary,  
Or but in *Circumstance* miscarry,  
Or if she put me to strict proof,  
And make me pull my *Doublet* off,  
To shew by evident Record,  
Writ on my skin, I've kept my word :  
How can I e'er expect to have her,  
Having demurr'd unto her favour ?  
But *Faith*, and *Love*, and *Honor* lost,  
Shall be reduc'd t' a *Knight o' th' Post* :  
Beside, that *Stripping* may prevent  
What I'm to prove by *Argument* ;  
And justifie I have a *Tail*,  
And that way too, my *proof* may fail.  
Or that I could enucleate,  
And solve the *Problems* of my *Fate* ;  
Or find by *Necromantick Art*,  
How far the *Dest'nies* take my part ;

For if I were not more than certain,  
To win, and wear her, and her *Fortune*,  
I'd go no farther in this *Courtship*,  
To hazard *Soul*, *Estate*, and *Worship*.

For though an *Oath* obliges not,  
Where any thing is to be got,  
(As thou hast prov'd,) yet 'tis *profane*  
And *sinful*, when men swear in *vain*;

Quoth *Ralph*, Not far from hence doth dwell  
A cunning man, hight *Sidrophel*,  
That deals in *Destinies* dark *Counsels*,  
And sage *Opinions* of the *Moon* tells;  
To whom all *People* far and near,  
On deep importances repair.

When *Brass* and *Pewter* hap to stray,  
And *Linnen* slinkt out of the way;  
When *Geese* and *Pullen* are seduc'd,  
And *Sows* of sucking *Pigs* are chews'd;

When

When *Cattle* feel Indisposition,  
 And need th' opinion of *Physitian* ;  
 When *Murrain* reigns in *Hogs*, or *Sheep*,  
 And *Chickens* languish of the *Pip* ;  
 When *Yeast*, and outward means do fail,  
 And have no pow'r to work on *Ale* ;  
 When *Butter* does refuse to come,  
 And *Love* proves cross and humorsome :  
 To him with *Questions*, and with *Urine*,  
 They for discov'ry flock, or *Curing*.  
 Quoth *Hudibras*, This *Sidrophel*  
 I've heard of, and should like it well,  
 If thou canst prove the *Saints*, have freedom,  
 To go to *Sorc'ers* when they need 'em.

Says *Ralpho*, There's no doubt of that :  
 Those *Principles* I quoted late,  
 Prove that the *Godly* may alledge  
 For any thing their *Priviledge* ;

And to the Dev'l himself may go,  
If they have *motives* thereunto.  
For as there is a *War* between  
The *Dev'l* and *them*, it is no *Sin*,  
If they, by subtle Stratagem,  
Make use of *him*, as he does *them*.  
Has not this present *Parliament*  
A *Legar* to the *Devil* sent,  
Fully empower'd to Treat about  
Finding revolted *Witches* out:  
And has not he, within a year,  
Hang'd Threescore of them in one *Shire*?  
Some only for not being *drown'd*,  
And some for sitting above ground,  
Whole *days* and *Nights* upon their breeches,  
And feeling pain, were hang'd for *Witches*.  
And some for putting *Knaveish* tricks  
Upon *Green-Geese*, and *Turkey Chicks*.

Or *Pigs*, that suddenly deceast,  
Of griefs unnat'ral, as he guest ;  
Who after prov'd himself a *Witch*,  
And made a Rod for his own *breech*.  
Did not the Dev'l appear to *Martin*  
*Luther*, in *Germany*, for certain ;  
And would have gull'd him with a Trick,  
But *Mart.* was too too *Politick* ?  
Did he not help the *Dutch* to purge,  
At *Antwerp*, their Cathedral Church ?  
Sing catches to the *Saints* at *Mascon*,  
And tell them all they came to ask him ?  
Appear in divers shapes to *Kelly* ?  
And speak i' th' *Nun* at *Londons* Belly ?  
Meet with the *Parliament's* Committee  
At *Woodstock*, on a Pars'nal Treaty ?  
At *Sarum* take a *Cavalier*  
I' th' *Cause's* service, *Prisoner* ?



As *Withers* in immortal Rime  
Has register'd to after-time ?  
Do not our great *Reformers* use  
This *Sidrophel* to foreboad *News* ?  
To write of *Victories* next Year,  
And *Castles* taken yet i' th' *Air* ;  
Of Battels fought at *Sea*, and Ships  
Sunk, two Years hence, the last *Eclips* ?  
A Total O'erthrow giv'n the *King*  
In *Cornwal*, *Horse*, and *Foot*, next Spring ?  
And has not he point-blank foretold  
Whats'er the close *Committee* would ?  
Made *Mars* and *Saturn* for the *Cause*,  
The *Moon* for Fundamental *Laws* ?  
The *Ram*, and *Bull*, and *Goat* declare  
Against the Book of *Common Pray'r* ?  
The *Scorpion* take the *Protestation*,  
And *Bear* engage for *Reformation* ?

Made all the *Royal Stars* recant,  
Compound, and take the *Covenant*.

Quoth *Hudibras*, The case is clear,  
The *Saints* ma' imploy a *Conjurer*,  
As thou hast prov'd it by their *practice*,  
No *Argument* like matter of Fact is :  
And we are best of all led to  
Mens *Principles* by what they do.  
Then let us strait advance in quest  
Of this profound *Gymnosophist* :  
And as the *Fates*, and *He* advise,  
Pursue, or wave this *Enterprise*.  
This said, he turn'd about his Steed,  
And estfoons on th' adventure rid,  
Where, leave we *Him* and *Ralph* a while,  
And to the *Conj'rer* turn our stile :  
To let our *Reader* understand  
What's useful of him, before hand,

He had been long t'wards *Mathematicks*,  
*Opticks*, *Philosophy*, and *Staticks*,  
*Magick*, *Horoscopy*, *Astrology*,  
And was *old Dog* at *Phyfiology*;  
But, as a *Dog* that turns the spit,  
Bestirs himself, and plies his feet,  
To climb the *Wheel*; but all in vain,  
His own weight brings him down again:  
And still he's in the self-same place,  
Where at his setting out he was.  
So in the *Circle* of the *Arts*,  
Did he advance his nat'ral *Parts*;  
Till falling back still, for retreat,  
He fell to *Juggle*, *Cant*, and *Cheat*;  
For as those *Fowls* that live in *Water*  
Are never wet, he did but smatter;  
Whate'er he labour'd to appear,  
His Understanding still was clear.

Yet none a deeper knowledge boasted,  
Since old *Hodg Bacon*, and *Bod Grosted*,  
Th' *Intelligible World* he knew,  
And all men, dream on't, to be true :  
That in this *World*, there's not a *Wart*,  
That has not there a Counterpart ;  
Nor can there on the *face* of Ground,  
An Individual *Beard* be found,  
That has not, in that foreign *Nation*,  
A Fellow of the self-same fashion ;  
So *cut*, so *color'd*, and so *curl'd*,  
As those are, in th' *Inferior World*,  
H' had read *Dee's* Prefaces before  
The *Dev'l*, and *Euclide* o'er and o'er.  
And all th' *Intrigues*, 'twixt him and *Kelly*,  
*Lescus*, and th' *Emperor*, would not tell ye.  
But with the *Moon* was more familiar  
Than e'er was *Almanack well-willer*.

Her secrets understood so clear,  
That some believ'd he had been there.  
Knew when he was in fittest mood,  
For cutting *Corns*, or letting *blood* :  
When for anointing *Scabs* and *Itches*,  
Or to the *Bum* applying *Leeches* ;  
When *Sows* and *Bitches* may be spade,  
And in what Sign best *Sider's* made,  
Whether the *Wane* be, or *Increase*,  
Best to set *Garlick*, or sow *Pease*.  
Who first found out the *Man i'th' Moon*,  
That to the *Ancients* was unknown ;  
How many *Dukes*, and *Earls*, and *Peers*,  
Are in the *Planetary Spheres*,  
Their *Airy Empire* : and command  
Their sev'ral strengths by *Sea* and *Land* ;  
What factions th' have, and what they drive at  
In publick *Vogue*, and what in private ;

With what Designs and Interests,  
Each Party manages Contests,  
He made an *Instrument* to know  
If the *Moon* shine at Full or no,  
That would as soon as e'er she shon, strait  
Whether 'twere Day or Night demonstrate;  
Tell what her *D'ameter* t' an Inch is,  
And prove she is not made of *Green-Cheese* :  
It would demonstrate, that the *Man in*  
*The Moon's* a *Sea Mediterranean*.  
And that it is no *Dog*, nor *Bitch*,  
That stands behind him at his breech ;  
But a huge *Caspian Sea*, or *Lake*  
With *Arms* which Men for *Legs* mistake,  
How large a *Gulph* his Tail composes,  
And what a goodly *Bay* his Nose is ;  
How many *German Leagues* by th' scale,  
*Cape-Snout's* from *Promontory-Tayl* :

He made a *Planetary Gin*,  
Which *Rats* would run their own heads in,  
And come o' purpose to be taken,  
Without th' expence of Cheese or Bacon;  
With *Lute-strings* he would counterfeit  
Maggots, that crawl on dish of meat,  
Quote Moles and Spots, on any place  
O' th' body, by the *Index-face* :  
Detect lost *Maidenheads*, by sneezing,  
Or breaking wind of *Dames*, or pissing.  
Cure *Warts* and *Corns*, with application  
Of *Med'cines*, to th' *Imagination*.  
Fright *Agues* into *Dogs*, and scare  
With *Rimes* the *Toorb-ach* and *Catarrh*.  
Chase evil *spirits* away by dint  
Of *Cickle Horseshoe*, *Hollow-flint*.  
Spit fire out of a *Walnut-shell*,  
Which made the *Roman Slaves* rebell.

And



And fire a Mine in *China*, here,  
With Sympathetick *Gunpowder*.  
He knew what's ever's to be known,  
But much more than he knew, would own,  
What *Med'cine* 'twas that *Paracelsus*  
Could make a man with, as he tells us.  
What figur'd *Slats* are best to make,  
On wat'ry surface, *Duck* or *Drake*.  
What *Bowling-stones*, in running race  
Upon a *Board*, have swiftest pace.  
Whether a *Pulse* beat in the black  
Lift of a *Dapl'd Louse's* back.  
If *Systole* or *Diaftole* move  
Quickest, when he's in wrath, or love:  
When two of them do run a race,  
Whether they *Gallop*, *Trot*, or *Pace*,  
How many scores a *Flea* will jump,  
Of his own length, from Head to Rump;

Which

Which *Socrates*, and *Chærephon*  
In vain, essay'd so long ago ;  
Whether his *Snout* a perfect *Nose* is,  
And not an Elephant's *Proboscis*,  
How many different *Specieses*  
Of Maggots breed in rotten Cheese,  
And which are next of kin to those  
Engendred in a *Chandler's* Nose,  
Or those not seen, but understood,  
That live in *Vinegar* and *Wood* ;  
A poultry Wretch, he had, half-starv'd,  
That him in place of *Zany* serv'd ;  
Hight *Whachum*, bred to dash and draw,  
Not *Wine*, but more unwholsome *Law* ;  
To make 'twixt words and lines, huge gaps,  
Wide as *Meridians* in Maps.  
To squander Paper, and spare Ink,  
Or cheat men of their words, some think ;

From

From this, by merited degrees,  
He to more high Advancement rise;  
To be an Under-*Conjurer*,  
Or Journey-man *Astrologer*;  
His bus'ness was to pump and wheedle,  
And Men with their own keys unriddle.  
To make them to themselves give answers,  
For which they pay the *Necromancers*  
To fetch and carry *Intelligence*,  
Of whom, and what, and where, and whence,  
And all *Discoveries* disperse,  
Among th' whole pack of *Conjurers*;  
What *Cutpurses* have left with them,  
For the right owners to redeem;  
And, what they dare not vend, find out,  
To gain themselves, and th' *Art*, repute.  
Draw *Figures*, *Schemes*, and *Horoscopes*,  
Of *Newgate*, *Bridewell*, *Brokers Shops*.

Of Thieves *ascendent* in the *Cart*,  
And find out all by rules of *Art*.  
Which way a Serving-man that's run  
With Cloaths or Mony away, is gone :  
Who pick'd a *Fob*, at *Holding-forth*,  
And where a *Watch*, for half the worth,  
May be redeem'd ; or Stolen Plate  
Restor'd, at Conscionable rate.  
Beside all this, he serv'd his *Master*  
In quality of *Poetaster* :  
And *Rimes* appropriate could make,  
To ev'ry month i' th' *Almanack*.  
When *Terms* begin, and end, could tell,  
With their *Returns*, in *Doggerel*.  
When the *Exchequer* opes and shuts,  
And *Songelder*, with safety cuts.  
When Men may Eat and Drink their fill,  
And when be temp'rate if they will.

When

When use, and when abstain from Vice;  
*Figs, Grapes, Phlebotomy, and Spice:*  
And as in *Prisons*, mean Rogues beat  
*Hemp*, for the service of the Great;  
So *Whachum* beat his dirty brains,  
T' advance his Masters Fame and Gains;  
And like the Devil's *Oracles*,  
Put into *Dogrel-Rimes* his *Spells*,  
Which over ev'ry Month's blank-page  
I' th' *Almanack*, strange *Bilks* presage.  
He would an *Elegy* compose  
On Maggots squeez'd out of his Nose;  
In *Lyrick* numbers write an *Ode* on  
His Mistress, eating a Black-pudden:  
And when imprison'd Air escap'd her,  
It pufft him with *Poetick Rapture*:  
His *Sonnets* charm'd th' attentive Crowd;  
By wide-mouth'd Mortal troul'd aloud;

That,

That, circl'd with his long-ear'd Guests,  
Like *Orpheus* look'd, among the Beasts,  
A *Carman's* Horse could not pass by,  
But stood ty'd up to *Poetry*,  
No Porter's *Burthen* past along,  
But serv'd for *Burthen* to his Song.  
Each Windore, like a *Pill'ry* appears,  
With heads thrust through, nail'd by the Ears:  
All Trades run in as to the sight  
Of Monsters, or their dear delight;  
The *Gallow-Tree*, when cutting Purse,  
Breeds bus'ness for *Heroick* Verse,  
Which none does hear, but would have hung  
I've been the *Theame* of such a Song.  
Those two together long had liv'd,  
In *Mansion* prudently contriv'd;  
Where neither Tree, nor House could bar  
The free detection of a Star;

And

And nigh an *Antient Obelisk*  
Was rais'd by him, found out by *Fisk*,  
On which was written, not in words,  
But *Hieroglyphick Mute of Birds*,  
Many rare pithy *Saws* concerning  
The worth of *Astrologick Learning*:  
From top of this there hung a *Rope*,  
To which he fastned *Telescope*;  
The *Spectacles*, with which the Stars  
He reads in smallest *Characters*.  
It hapned as a *Boy*, one night,  
Did fly his *Tarfel* of a *Kite*,  
The strangest long-wing'd *Hawk* that flies,  
That like a *Bird of Paradise*.  
Or *Heralds Martlet*, has no *legs*,  
Nor hatches young ones, nor lay *Eggs*;  
His *Train* was six yards long, milk-white,  
At th' end of which there hung a *Light*,



Enclos'd in *Lanthorn* made of *Paper*,  
 That far off like a *Star* did appear.  
 This *Sidrophel* by chance espy'd,  
 And with Amazement staring wide,  
*Bless* us, quoth he, What dreadful wonder  
 Is that, appears in *Heaven* yonder?  
 A *Comet*, and without a *Beard*?  
 Or *Star*, that ne're before appear'd;  
 I'm certain, 'tis not in the *Scrawl*,  
 Of all those *Beasts*, and *Fish* and *Fowl*,  
 With which, like *Indian Plantations*,  
 The Learned stock the *Constellations*:  
 Nor those that drawn from *Signs* have bin,  
 To th' *Houses* where the *Planets* Inn.  
 It must be supernatural,  
 Unless it be that *Cannon-Ball*,  
 That, shot in th' *Air*, point-blank, upright,  
 Was born to that prodigious height,

That learn'd *Philosophers* maintain,  
It ne're came backwards, down agen ;  
But in the *Aëry Region* yet,  
Hangs like the Body o' *Mahomet*.  
For if it be above the Shade,  
That by the *Earths* round bulk is made,  
'Tis probable, it may, from far,  
Appear no Bullet but a Star.

This said, He to his Engine flew,  
Plac'd near at hand, in open view,  
And rais'd it, till it levell'd right  
Against the *Glow-worm* Tail of *Kite*.  
Then peeping through, ( *bless* us quoth he )  
It is a *Planet* now I see ;  
And if I err not, by this proper  
*Figure*, that's like *Tobacco-stopper*,  
It should be *Saturn* : yes, 'tis clear  
'Tis *Saturn*, But what makes him there ?

He's got between the *Dragon's* Tail,  
And farther Leg behind, o'th' *Whale* ;  
Pray *Heaven*, divert the fatal Omen,  
For 'tis a *Prodigy* not common,  
And can no less than the *Worlds* end,  
Of *Natures* funeral portend.  
With that he fell again to pry  
Through *Perspective* more wistfully,  
When by mischance, the fatal string  
That kept the *Tow'ring Fowl* on wing,  
Breaking, down fell the *Star* : Well shot,  
Quoth *Whachum*, who right wisely thought  
H' had levell'd at a *Star*, and hit it :  
But *Sidrophel* more subtle-witted,  
Cry'd out, What horrible and fearful,  
Portent is this, to see a *Star* fall :  
It threatens *Nature*, and the doom  
Will not be long before it come.

When Stars do fall, 'tis plain enough,  
The *Day of Judgment*'s not far off:  
As lately 'twas reveal'd to *Sedgwick*.  
And some of us find out by *Magick*.  
Then, since the time we have to live,  
In this *world*'s shortned, Let us strive,  
To make our best advantage of it,  
And pay our losses with our profit.  
This feat fell out, not long before  
The *Knight* upon the forenam'd score,  
In quest of *Sidrophel* advancing,  
Was now in prospect of the *Mansion*:  
Whom he discovering, turn'd his *Glass*,  
And found far off, 'twas *Hudibras*.

*Whachum* ( quoth he ) look yonder ; some  
To try, or use our Art, are come :  
The one's the Learned *Knight* ; seek out,  
And pump 'em, what they come about.

*Whachum*

*Whachum* advanc'd with all submissness,  
T' accost 'em, but much more, their bus'ness.  
He held the Stirrup, while the *Knight*,  
From *Leathern Bare-Bones* did alight,  
And taking from his hand, the Bridle,  
Approach'd the dark *Squire* to unriddle.  
He gave him first the time o' th' day,  
And welcom'd him, *as he might say* :  
He ask'd them whence they came, and whither  
Their business lay ? Quoth *Ralpho*, hither ;  
Did you not lose — Quoth *Ralpho*, Nay ;  
Quoth *Whachum*, Sir, I meant your way ;  
Your *Knight* — Quoth *Ralpho*, is a *Lover*,  
And pains intolerable doth suffer,  
For *Lovers* Hearts are not their own Hearts,  
Nor Lights nor Lungs, and so forth downwards ;  
What time — Quoth *Ralpho*, Sir too long,  
Three years it off and on, has hung —

Quoth he, I meant what time o' th' day 'tis.  
Quoth *Ralpho*, between seven and eight 'tis.  
Why then (quoth *Whackum*) my small *Art*  
Tells me, the *Dame* has a hard *Heart*,  
Or great *Estate* — Quoth *Ralph*, a *Joynter*,  
Which makes him have so hot a mind t' her.  
Mean while the *Knight* was making water,  
Before he fell upon the matter;  
Which having done, the *Wizard* steps in,  
To give him a suitable Reception;  
But kept his bus'ness at a *Bay*,  
Till *Whackum* put him in the way.  
Who having now by *Ralpho's* light,  
Expounded th' Errand of the *Knight*,  
And what he came to know, drew near,  
To whisper in the *Conjurers* ear.  
Which he prevented thus: What was't,  
Quoth he, that I was saying last,

Before these *Gentlemen* arriv'd ?

Quoth *Whachum*, *Venus* you retri'd,

In opposition with *Mars*,

And no benigne friendly Stars

T' allay th' effect. Quoth *Wizard*, So !

In *Virgo* ? Ha ! quoth *Whachum*, No.

Has *Saturn* nothing to do in't ?

One tenth of 's *Circle* to a minute.

'Tis well, quoth he — Sir you'l excuse

This rudeness, I am forced to use,

It is a *Scheme*, and face of *Heaven*

As the *Aspects* are dispos'd, this *Even*,

I was contemplating upon,

When you arriv'd : but now I've done.

Quoth *Hudibras*, If I appear

Unseasonable in coming here

At such a time, to interrupt

Your *Speculations*, which I hop'd



Assistance from, and come to use,

'Tis fit that I ask your excuse.

By no means, Sir, Quoth *Sidrophel*,  
The Stars your coming did foretel :  
I did expect you here, and know,  
Before you speak your bus'ness too.

Quoth *Hudibras*, Make that appear,  
And I shall credit whatsoe'er  
You tell me after on your word,  
Howe're unlikely, or absurd.

You are in *Love*, Sir, with a *Widow*,  
Quoth he, that does not greatly heed you ;  
And three years has rid your *Wit*  
And *Passion* without drawing *Bit* :  
And now your bus'ness is, to know  
If you shall carry her, or no.

Quoth *Hudibras*, you're in the right,  
But how the *Devil* you come by't,

I can't

I cann't imagine ; for the *Stars*  
I'm sure, can tell no more than a *Horse*,  
Nor can their *Aspects* ( though you pore  
Your Eyes out on'em ) tell you more  
Than the *Oracle* of *Sive* and *Sheers*,  
That turns as certain as the *Spheres* ;  
But if the *Devil's* of your Counsel,  
Much may be done, my noble *Donzel*,  
And 'tison this account I come,  
To know from you my fatal Doom.

Quoth *Sidrophel*, If you suppose,  
Sir *Knight*, that I am one of those,  
I might suspect and take the *Alarm*,  
Your bus'ness is but to inform :  
But if it be, 'tis ne'er the near,  
You have a *wrong* sow by the *Ear*,  
For I assure you, for my part,  
I only deal by *Rules* of *Art*,

Such as are lawful, and judge by  
Conclusions of *Astrology*:

But for the *Devil*, know nothing by him,  
But only this, that I defie him.

Quoth he, Whatever others deem ye  
I understand your *Metonymie*;  
Your words of second hand intention,  
When things by wrongful names you mention;  
The Mystick sense of all your *Terms*,  
That are indeed but *Magick Charms*,  
To raise the *Devil*, and mean one thing,  
And that is, down-right *Conjuring*:  
And in its self more warrantable,  
Than *Cheat*, or *Canting* to a *Rabble*,  
Or putting *Tricks* upon the *Moon*,  
Which by confederacy are done.  
Your Ancient *Conjurers* were wont  
To make her from her Sphere dismount,

And to their *Incantations* stoop,  
They scorn'd to pore through *Telescope*,  
Or idly play at bo-peep with her,  
To find out cloudy, or fair weather,  
Which every *Almanack* can tell,  
Perhaps, as learnedly, and well,  
As you your self—— Then friend I doubt  
You go the farthest way about.  
Your Modern *Indian Magician*  
Makes but a hole i'th' Earth to piss in,  
And streit resolves all Questions by't,  
And seldom fails to be i'th' right.  
The *Rosy-crucian* way's more sure,  
To bring the Devil to the Lure ;  
Each of'em has a sev'ral Gin,  
To catch *Intelligences* in.  
Some by the *Nose* with fumes trappan'um,  
As *Dunstan* did the Devil's Grannum.

Others

Others with *Characters* and *Words*,  
Catch 'em as Men in *Nets* do *Birds*.  
And some with *Symbols*, *Signs* and *Tricks*,  
Engarv'd in *Planetary* Nicks,  
With their own influences, will fetch 'em,  
Down from their Orbs, arrest and catch 'em ;  
Make 'em depose, and answer to

*All Questions* e'er they let him go.

*Bumbastus*, kept a *Devil's Bird*

Shut in the Pummel of his Sword,  
That taught him all the cunning Pranks,  
Of past and future *Mountebanks*.

*Kelly* did all his Feats upon

The Devil's *Looking-Glass*, a *Stone*,  
Where playing with him at *Bo-peep*,  
He solv'd all *Problems* ne're so deep.

*Agrippa* kept a *Stygian-pug*,  
I' th' garb and habit of a *Dog*,

That

That washis *Tutor* ; and the *Curr*  
Read to th' occult *Philosopher*,  
And taught him subtly to maintain  
All other *Sciences* are vain.

To this, quoth *Sidrophello*, Sir,  
*Agrippa* was no *Conjurer*,  
Nor *Paracelsus*, no nor *Behman* ;  
Nor was the *Dog* a *Cacodæmon*,  
But a true *Dog*, that would shew tricks  
For th' *Emperor*, and leap o're sticks ;  
Would *fetch* and *carry*, was more civil,  
Than other *Dogs*, but yet no Devil ;  
And whatfo'er he's said to do,  
He went the self-same way we go.  
As for the *Rosse-crofs Philosophers*,  
Whom you will have to be but *Sorcerers* ;  
What they pretend to, is no more,  
Than *Trismegistus* did before,

*Pythagoras*

*Pythagoras*, old *Zoroaster*,  
And *Appollonius* their Master;  
To whom they do confess I ow,  
All that they do, and all they know.

Quoth *Hudibras*, Alas what is't to us,  
Whether 'twere said by *Trismegistus*;  
If it be *nonsense*, *false*, or *mystick*,  
Or not *intelligible*, or *sophistick*.  
'Tis not *Antiquity*, nor *Author*,  
That makes *truth truth*, although *time's daughter*;  
'Twas he that put her in the *Pit*,  
Before he pull'd her out of it.  
And as he eats his *Sons*, just so  
He feeds upon his *Daughters* too.  
Nor do's it follow, cause a *Herald*  
Can make a Gentleman scarce a year old,  
To be descended of a Race,  
Of ancient *Kings* in a small space;

That



That we should all Opinion hold  
*Authentick*, that we can make old.

Quoth *Sidrophel*, It is no part  
Of prudence, to cry down an *Art* ;  
And what it may perform, deny  
Because you understand not why.

( As *Averrhois* play'd but mean trick,  
To damn our whole *Art* for *Excentrick* )

For who knows all that knowledge contains ?

Men dwell not on the *Tops* of *Mountains*,  
But on their sides, or rising's seat ;

'Tis with knowledge's vast height,

Do not the Hist'ries of all *Ages*

Relate miraculous presages,

Of strange turns in the *World's* affairs,

Foreseen b' *Astrologers*, *Soothsayers*,

*Chaldeans*, Learn'd *Genethliacks*,

And some that have writ *Almanacks* ?

The

The *Median* Emp'rour dream't his Daughter,  
Had pift all *Afia* under wáter,<sup>?</sup>  
And that a *Vine*, sprung from her *hanches*,  
O'erspread his *Empire*, with its branches;  
And did not *Soothsayers* expound it,  
As after by th'event he found it?  
When *Cæsar* in the Senate fell,  
Did not the Sun eclips'd foretel,  
And in resentment of his slaughter,  
Look'd pale for almost a year after?  
*Augustus* having, b' oversight,  
Put on his left Shoe, 'fore his right,  
Had like to have been Slain that day,  
By *Soldiers* mutining for pay.  
Are there not myriads of this sort,  
Which Stories of all times report?  
Is it not ominous in all *Countreys*,  
When *Crows* and *Ravens* croak upon Trees?

The *Roman Senate*, when within  
The City-walls an *Owl* was seen,  
Did cause their *Clergy* with *Lustrations*,  
(Our *Synod* calls *Humiliations*,)  
The round-fac'd *Prædigi* t' avert  
From doing *Town* or *Country* hurt.  
And if an *Owl* have so much pow'r,  
Why should not *Planets* have much more :  
That in a *Region*, far above  
Inferior Fowls o' th' *Air*, move,  
And should see farther, and fore-know,  
More then their *Augury* below :  
Though that once serv'd the *Polity*  
Of mighty States to govern by ;  
And this is that we take in hand,  
By pow'rful *Art* to understand.  
Which, how we have perform'd, all Ages  
Can speak th' *Events* of our presages,

Have we not lately in the *Moon*  
Found a new *World* to th' *Old* unknown ?  
Discover'd *Sea* and *Land*, *Columbus*  
And *Magellan* could never compass ?  
Made Mountains with our *Tubes* appear,  
And Cattle gazing on 'em there ?

Quoth *Hudibras*, You lie so ope,  
That I, without a *Telescope*,  
Can find your tricks out, and descry  
Where you tell truth, and where you lie.  
For *Anaxagoras* long ago,  
Saw *Hills*, as well as you i' th' *Moon*;  
And held the *Sun* was but a piece  
Of *Red-hot-Ir'n* as big as *Greece* ;  
Believ'd the Heavens were made of *Stone*,  
Because the *Sun* had voided one ;  
And rather than he would recant  
Th' *Opinion*, suffer'd Banishment..

But what, alas, what is't to us,  
Whether i' th' *Moon*, men thus or thus,  
Do eat their *Porridge*, cut their *Corns*,  
Or whether they have *Tails* or *Horns*?  
What *Trade* from thence can you advance  
But what we nearer have from *France*?  
What can our *Travellers* bring home,  
That is not to be learnt at *Rome*?  
What *Politicks*, or strange *Opinions*,  
That are not in our own *Dominions*?  
What *Science* can be brought from thence,  
In which we do not here *Commence*?  
What *Revelations*, or *Religions*,  
That are not in our Native *Regions*?  
Are sweating *Lanthorns*, or *Screen-Fans*  
Made better there, than th'are in *France*?  
Or do they teach to *sing* and *play*  
O' th' *Gittar* there a newer way?

Can they make *Plays* there, that shall fit  
The *Publick Humor* with less *Wit* ?

Write *wittier Dances*, quainter *Shows*,  
Or fight with more ingenious *Blows* ?

Or does the Man i'th' *Moon* look big,  
And wear a huger *Periwig*,

Shew in his Gate, or Face, more tricks  
Than our own *Native Lunatics* ?

But if w' out-do him here at home,  
What good of your design can come ?

As *wind* i' th' *Hypochondrias* pent  
Is but a blast if downward sent ;

But if it upwards chance to fly,  
Becomes new *Light* and *Prophecy* :

So when our *Speculations* tend,  
Above their just and useful end,

Although they promise strange and great,  
*Discoveries* of things far set,

They

They are but idle *Dreams* and *Fancies*,  
And favor strongly of the *Ganzas*,  
Tell me but what's the nat'ral cause,  
Why on a *Sign* no *Painter* draws  
The *Full-Moon* ever, but the *Half*,  
Resolve that with your *Jacobs-staff*;  
Or why *Wolves* raise a *Hubbub* at her,  
And *Dogs* howl when she shines in water;  
And I shall freely give my *Vote*,  
You may know something more remote.

At this deep *Sidrophel* look'd wise,  
And staring round with *Owl-like* Eies,  
He put his face into a posture  
Of *Sapiënce*, and began to bluster;  
For having three times shook his head  
To stir his wit up, thus he said.

*Art* has no mortal *Enemies*  
Next *Ignorance*, but *Owls* and *Geese*;

A a 3

Those



Those Consecrated Geese in Orders,  
That to the *Capitol* were *Warders* :  
And being then upon *Petrol*,  
With noise alone beat of the *Gaul*.  
Or those *Athenian Sceptick Owls*,  
That will not credit their own *Souls* ;  
Or any Science understand,  
Beyond the reach of Eye, or Hand :  
But meas'ring all things by their own  
Knowledge, hold, Nothing's to be known.  
Those whole-sale *Criticks*, that in *Coffee-*  
*Houses*, cry down all *Philosophy*.  
And will not know, upon what ground  
In *Nature*, we our *doctrine* found ;  
Although with pregnant evidence,  
We can demonstrate it to sence.  
As I just now have done to you,  
Foretelling what you came to know,

Were the *Stars* only made to light  
Robbers and Burglaries by night ?  
To wait on *Drunkards, Thieves, Gold-finders,*  
And *Lovers* solacing behind Doors ?  
Or giving one another Pledges ?  
Of *Mrtrimony* under Hedges ?  
Or *Witches Simpling*, and on *Gibbets*  
Cutting from *Malefactors* snippets ?  
Or from the *Pillory* tips of Ears  
Of Rebel-Saints, and Perjurers ?  
Only to stand by and look on,  
But not know what is said or done ?  
Is there a *Constellation* there,  
That was not born and bred up here ?  
And therefore cannot be to learn,  
In any inferior Concern.  
Were they not, during all their lives,  
Most of 'm *Pirats, Whores, and Thieves* ?

And is it like they have not still  
In their old *Practises* some skill ?  
Is there a *Planet* that by *Birth*  
Does not derive its *House* from *Earth* ?  
And therefore probably must know  
What is, and hath been done below ?  
Who made the *Ballance*, or whence came  
The *Bull*, the *Lion*, and the *Ram* ?  
Did not we here, the *Argo* rigg  
Make *Berenice's Periwig* ?  
Whose *Liv'ry* does the *Coachman* wear ?  
Or who made *Cassiopea's Chair* ?  
And therefore as they came from hence,  
With us may hold *Intelligence*.  
*Plato* deyn'd, the *World* can be  
Govern'd without *Geometry*,  
( For Mony b'ing the common Scale  
Of things by measure, weight, and tale ;

In all th' affairs of *Church and State*,  
'Tis both the *Ballance* and the *Weight* : )  
Then much less can it be without  
Divine *Astrology* made out,  
That puts the other down in worth,  
As far as *Heaven's* above *Earth*.

The reasons ( quoth the *Knight* ) I grant  
Are something more significant  
Than any that the *Learned* use,  
Upon this *subject* to produce;  
And yet, th' are far from satisfactory  
T' establish and keep up your *Factory*.  
The *Egyptians* say, the *Sun* has twice  
Shifted his *setting* and his *rise* ;  
Twice has he risen in the *West*,  
As many times set in the *East* ;  
But whether that be true, or no,  
The *Devil* any of you know.

Some hold, the *Heavens*, like a *Top*,  
Are kept by *Circulation* up;  
And 'twere not for their wheeling round,  
They'd instantly fall to the ground:  
As sage *Empedocles* of old,  
And from him *Modern* Authors old.  
*Plato* believ'd the *Sun* and *Moon*,  
Below all other *Planets* run.  
Some *Mercury*, some *Venus* feat  
Above the *Sun* himself in height.  
The learned *Scaliger* complain'd  
'Gainst what *Copernicus* maintain'd,  
That in Twelve hundred years, and odd,  
The *Sun* had left his ancient Road,  
And nearer to the Earth, is come  
'Bove Fifty thousand miles from home:  
Swore 'twas a most notorious Flam,  
And he that had so little Shame

To vent such *Fopperies* abroad,  
Deserv'd to have his *Rump* well claw'd;  
Which Monsieur *Bodin* hearing, swore  
That he deserv'd the *Rod* much more,  
That durst upon a *truth* give doom,  
He knew less then the Pope of *Rome*.  
*Cardan* believ'd, Great *States* depend  
Upon the tip o' th' *Bears* Tails end;  
That as she whisk'd it t'wards the Sun,  
Strow'd mighty *Empires* up and down;  
Which others say must needs be false,  
Because your true *Bears* have no Tails.  
Some say, the *Zodiack-Constellations*  
Have long since chang'd their antique *Stations*  
Above a *Sign*; and prove the same,  
In *Taurus* now, once in the *Ram*;  
Affirm the *Trigon* chop'd and chang'd,  
The *Watry* with the *Fiery* rang'd;

Then

Then how can their *effects* still hold  
To be the same they were of old.  
This, though the *Art* were true, would make  
Our Modern *Soothsayers* mistake ;  
And is one cause they tell more lies,  
In *Figures* and *Nativities*,  
Than th' old *Chaldean* Conjurers,  
In so many hundred thousand years ;  
Beside their Nonsense in translating,  
For want of *Accidence* and *Latine*.  
Like *Idus* and *Calendæ* Englisht  
The *Quarter-days* , by skilful Linguist,  
And yet with *Canting*, *Slight*, and *Cheat*  
Twill serve their turn to do the feat ;  
Make Fools believe in their fore-seeing  
Of things before they are in Being ;  
To swallow *Gudgeons* ere th' are catch'd,  
And count their *Chickens* ere th' are hatch'd,



Make them the *Constellations* prompt,  
and give 'em back their own accompt :  
but still the best to him that gives  
The best price for't, or best believes.  
Some *Towns* and *Cities*, some, for brevity,  
Have cast the Versal World's *Nativity* ;  
and made the Infant-Stars confess,  
like Fools or Children, what they please :  
Some calculate the hidden fates  
Of *Monkeys*, *Puppy-Dogs*, and *Cats*,  
Some *Running Nags*, and *Fighting-Cocks* ;  
Some *Love*, *Trade*, *Law-Suits*, and the *Pox* ;  
Some take a measure of the lives  
Of Fathers, Mothers, Husbands, Wives,  
Make *Opposition*, *Trine*, and *Quartile* ;  
Tell who is barren, and who fertile,  
As if the *Planet's* first aspect  
The tender Infant did infect

In *Soul* and *Body*, and instill  
All future good, and future ill :  
Which, in their dark fatalities lurking,  
At destin'd Periods fall a working ;  
And break out like the hidden seeds  
Of long diseases into deeds,  
In Friendships, Enmities and strife,  
And all th' emergences of Life:  
No sooner does he peep into,  
The *World*, but he has done his do,  
Catch'd all Diseases took all *Physick*,  
That cures, or kills a man that is sick ;  
Marry'd his punctual dose of Wives,  
Is Cuckolded, and breaks or Thrives.  
There's but twinckling of a *Star*  
Between a Man of *Peace* and *War*,  
A *Thief* and *Justice*, *Fool* and *Knave*,  
A huffing *Officer* and a *Slave*,

A crafty *Lawyer* and *Pick-pocket*,  
A great *Philosopher* and a *Block-head*,  
A formal *Preacher* and a *Player*,  
A learn'd *Physitian* and *Man-slayer*.  
As if Men from the Stars did suck  
Old-Age, *Diseases*, and *ill-luck*,  
*Vit*, *Folly*, *Honor*, *Virtue*, *Vice*,  
*Trade*, *Travel*, *Women*, *Claps*, and *Dice* ;  
And draw with the first Air they breath,  
*Pattel*, and *Murther*, *sudden Death*,  
Are not these fine Commodities,  
To be imported from the Skies ?  
And vended here among the Rable,  
For staple Goods, and warrantable ?  
Like Money by the *Druids* borrow'd,  
With' other *World* to be restor'd.  
Quoth *Sidrophel*, To let you know  
You wrong the *Art* and *Artists* too :

Since

Since Arguments are lost on those  
That do our *Principles* oppose ;  
I will ( although I've don't before )  
Demonstrate to your sense once more,  
And draw a *Figure* that shall tell you  
What you perhaps forget, besel you ;  
By way of *Horary* inspection,  
Which some account our worst erection.  
With that, He *Circles* draws, and *Squares*  
With *Cyphers*, *Astral Characters* ;  
Then looks 'em o'er, to understand 'em,  
Although set down *Hab-nab*, at random.

Quoth he, This *Scheme* o' th' Heavens set  
Discovers how in fight you met  
At *Kingston* with a *Maypole Idol*,  
And that y' were bang'd both back and side well :  
And though you overcame the *Bear*,  
The *Dogs* beat you at *Brentford Fair* ;

Where sturdy *Butcher* broke your Noddle,  
And handl'd you like a *Fop-doodle*.

Quoth *Hudibras*, I now perceive  
You are no *Conj'rer*, b' your leave,  
That *Paultry story* is untrue,  
And forg'd to cheat such *Gulls* as you.

Not true ? quoth he, How e'er you vapor,  
I can, what I affirm, make appear ;  
*Whachum* shall justifie 't to your face,  
And prove he was upon the place :  
He play'd the *Saltinbanco's* part,  
Transform'd t' a *Frenchman* by my *Art*;  
He stole your Cloak, and pick'd your Pocket;  
Chews'd, and Caldes'd ye like a Block-head :  
And what you lost I can produce  
If you deny it, here i' th' house.

Quoth *Hudibras*, I do believe,  
That Argument's *Demonstrative* ;

*Ralpho*, bear witness, and go fetch us  
A *Constable* to seize the Wretches :  
For though th' are both false *Knaves* and *Cheats*,  
*Impostors*, *Juglers*, *Counterfets*,  
I'll make them serve for perpendiculars,  
As true, as e'er were us'd by *Brick-layers* ;  
They're guilty by their own Confessions,  
Of *Felony* ; and at the *Sessions*  
Upon a Bench I will so handle 'em,  
That the *Vibration* of this *Pendulum*  
Shall make all *Taylors* Yards, of one  
Unanimous opinion :  
A thing he long has vapour'd of,  
But now shall make out it by proof.

Quoth *Sidrophel*, I do not doubt,  
To find friends, that will bear me out :  
Nor have I hazarded my *Art*,  
And Neck, so long on the *States* part,

To be expos'd i' th' end to suffer,

By which a *Braghadocio* Huffer.

*Huffer*, quoth *Hudibras*, This *Sword*  
Shall down thy false throat, Cram that word,  
*Ralpho*, make haste, and call an Officer,  
To apprehend this *Stygian* Sophister;  
Mean while I'll hold 'em at a *Bay*,  
Lest he and *Whachum* run away.

But *Sidrophel*, who from th' *Aspect*  
Of *Hudibras*, did now erect,  
A *Figure* worse portending far,  
Than that of most malignant Star:  
Believ'd it now the fittest moment,  
To shun the danger that might come on't,  
While *Hudibras* was all alone,  
And he and *Whachum*, two to one;  
This being resolv'd, He spy'd by chance,  
Behind the Dore, an *Iron Lance*,



That many a sturdy Limb had gor'd,  
And Legs, and Loyns, and Shoulders bord.  
He snatch'd it up, and made a Pass,  
To make his way through *Hudibras*.  
*Whachum* had a Fire-Fork,  
With which he vow'd to do his Work.  
But *Hudibras* was well prepar'd,  
And stoutly stood upon his Guard.  
He put by *Sidrophello's* thrust,  
And in, right manfully, he rusht,  
The weapon from his gripe he wrung,  
And laid him on the earth along.  
*Whachum* his Seacole-Prong threw by,  
And basely turn'd his back to fly.  
But *Hudibras* gave him a twitch  
As quich as Lightning in the Breech.  
Just in the place, where *Honor's* lodg'd,  
As wise *Philosophers* have judg'd ;

Because

Because a kick in that part more  
Hurts *Honor*, than deep wounds before.

Quoth *Hudibras*, the Stars determine,  
You are my Prisoners, base Vermine.  
Could they not tell you so, as well  
As what I came to know, foretel ?  
By this, what Cheats you are, we find,  
That in your own Concerns are blind ;  
Your Lives are now at my dispose,  
To be redeem'd by fine or blows :  
But who his Honor would defile,  
To take, or sell two lives so vile ;  
I'll give you *Quarter*, but your *Pillage*,  
The Conqu'ring Warriour's *Crop* and *Tillage*,  
Which with his Sword, he reaps, and plows ;  
That mine, the *Law of Arms* allows.

This said, in haste he fell  
To romaging of *Sidrophel*.

First, He expounded both his Pockets,  
And found a *Watch* with *Rings* and *Lockets*,  
Which had been left with him, t' erect  
A *Figure* for, and so detect.  
A *Copper-Plate*, with *Almanacks*  
Engrav'd upon't, with other knacks,  
Of *Booker's*, *Lillie's*, *Sarah Jimmers* ;  
And *Blank-Schemes* to discover *Nimmers* ;  
A *Moon-Dial*, with *Napier's bones*,  
And several *Constellation-stones*,  
Engrav'd in *Planetary hours*,  
That over *Mortals* had strange powers  
To make 'em thrive in *Law*, or *Trade* ;  
And stab, or poyson, to evade ;  
In *Wit*, or *Wisdom* to improve,  
And be victorious in *Love*.  
*Whachum* had neither *Cross* nor *Pile*,  
His *Plunder* was not worth the while ;

All which the *Conqu'ror* did discompt,  
To pay for curing of his Rump.

But *Sidrophel*, as fulls of tricks,  
As *Rota-men* of *Politicks*,  
Streight cast about to over-reach  
Th' unwary *Conqu'ror* with a fetch,  
And make him glad, (at least) to quit  
His *Victory*, and fly the *Pit*,

Before the *Secular Prince* of *Darkness*  
Arriv'd to seize upon his *Carkass*.

And, as a *Fox*, with hot pursuit,  
Chac'd through a *Warren*, cast about  
To save his credit, and among

Dead *Vermin* on a *Gallows* hung;  
And while the *Dogs* ran underneath,  
Escap'd (by counterfeiting Death)

Not out of *Cunning*, but a *Train*  
Of *Atoms* jostling in his Brain,

As learn'd *Philosophers* give out ;  
So *Sidrophello* cast about,  
And fell to's wonted *Trade* again,  
To feign himself in earnest slain,  
First, stretch'd out one leg, then another,  
And seeming in his Breast to smother,  
A broken Sigh ; Quoth he, Where am I,  
Alive or Dead ? Or which way came I  
Through so immense a space so soon ?  
But now, I thought my self i' th' *Moon* ;  
And that a *Monster* with huge *Wiskers*,  
More formidable than a *Switzers*,  
My body through and through had drill'd,  
And *Whachum* by my side, had kill'd,  
Had cross-examin'd both our *Hose*,  
And plunder'd all we had to lose ;  
Look there he is, I see him now,  
And feel the place I am run through

And

And there lies *Whachum* by my side,  
Stone-déad, and in his own blood dy'd.  
Oh ! Oh ! with that he fetch'd a *Grone*,  
And fell again into a swoun.  
Shut both his Eies, and stopt his Breath,  
And, to the *Life*, out acted-*Death*.  
That *Hadibras*, to all appearing,  
Believ'd him to be dead as *Herring*.  
He held it now no longer safe,  
To tarry the return of *Ralph* ;  
But rather leave him in the *Lurch* ;  
Thought he, he has abus'd our *Church*,  
Refus'd to give himself one firke,  
To carry on the *Publick work*.  
Despis'd our *Synod-men* like Durt.  
And made their Discipline his sport ;  
Divulg'd the secrets of their *Classes*,  
And their *Conventions* prov'd *High Places* ;

Disparag'd their *Tith-Pigs*, as *Pagan*,  
And set at nought their *Cheese* and *Bacon*;  
Rail'd at their *Covenant*, and jear'd  
Their rev'rend *Parsons* to my *Beard*,  
For all which *Scandals* to be quit,  
At once, this *Juncture* falls out fit,  
I'll make him henceforth, to beware,  
And tempt my fury, if he dare.  
He must (at least) hold up his hand,  
By twelve *Free-holders* to be scan'd,  
Who by their skill in *Palmistry*,  
Will quickly read his *Destiny*;  
And make him glad to read his *Lesson*,  
Or take a turn for't at the *Session*:  
Unless his *Light* and *Gifts* prove truer,  
Than ever yet they did, I'm sure;  
For if he scape with *Whipping* now,  
'Tis more than he can hope to do,

And



And that will disingage my *Conscience*,  
Of th' *Obligation*, in his own sense.  
I'll make him now by force abide,  
What he by gentle means deny'd,  
To give my *Honor* satisfaction,  
And right the *Brethren* in the *Action*.  
This being resolv'd with equal speed,  
And *Conduct*, he approach'd his *Steed*;  
And with *Activity* unwont,  
Essay'd the lofty *Beast* to mount;  
Which once atchiev'd, he spurr'd his *Palfrey*,  
To get from th' *Enemy*, and *Ralph*, free;  
Left Danger, Fears, and Foes behind,  
And beat, at least three lengths, the Wind.

AN

AN  
HEROICAL EPISTLE  
OF  
HUDIBRAS  
TO  
SIDROPHEL

*Ecce iterum Crispinus—*



Well *Sidrophel*, though 'tis in vain  
To tamper with your Crazy Brain,  
Without Trepanning of your Scull.

As often as the *Moon's* at *Full* :

'Tis not amiss, ere y' are giv'n o'er,

To try one desp'rate Med'cine more :

For where your Case can be no worse,  
The desp'rat' it is the wisest course.  
Is't possible, that you, whose Ears  
Are of the Tribe of *Iffachars*,  
And might ( with equal Reason ) either  
For Merit, or extent of Leather,  
With *William Pryn's*, before they were  
Retrench'd, and Crucifi'd compare,  
Should you be deaf against a noise  
So roaring as the Publick Voice ?  
That speaks your virtues free and loud,  
And openly in ev'ry croud.  
As loud as one that sings his part  
T' a Wheel-barrow or Turnip Cart, ——  
Or your new Nicknam'd old Invention,  
To cry Green Hastings with an Engine.  
[ As if the vehemence had stun'd,  
And torn your Drum-heads with the sound )

And

And 'cause your Folly's now no news,  
But over-grown and out of use.  
Persuade your self there's no such matter,  
But that 'tis vanish'd out of Nature,  
When Folly, as it grows in years,  
The more extravagant appears.  
For who but you could be possesst  
With so much Ignorance, and Beast,  
That neither all mens Scorn, and Hate,  
Nor being Laugh'd and Pointed at,  
Nor bray'd so often in a Morter,  
Can teach you wholesome Sense, and Nurture?  
But (like a Reprobate) what course  
S' ever's us'd, grow worse and worse?  
Can no Transfusion of the Blood,  
That makes Fools Cattle, do you good?  
Nor putting Pigs t' a Bitch to Nurse,  
To turn 'em into Mungrel-Curs,

Put you into a way, at least,  
 To make your self a better Beast;  
 Can all your critical Intrigues  
 Of trying found from rotten Eggs;  
 Your several New-found Remedies,  
 Of curing Wounds, and Scabs in Trees;  
 Your *Arts* of *Fluxing* them from *Claps*,  
 And Purging their infected *Saps*,  
 Recov'ring Shankers, Chrystallines,  
 And Nodes and Botches in their Rindes,  
 Have no effect to operate  
 Upon that duller Block, your Pate,  
 But still it must be lewdly bent  
 To tempt your own due Punishment——  
 And like your whimsey'd Chariots draw  
 The Boys to course you without Law?  
 As if the Art you have so long  
 Profess'd, of making old *Dogs* young,

In you had Virtue to renew  
Not only Youth, but Childhood too.  
Can you, that understand all Books  
By judging only with your Looks,  
Resolve all Problems with your Face,  
As others do with *B's*, and *A's*,  
Unriddle all that Mankind knows  
With solid bending of your Brows,  
All Arts and Sciences advance,  
With screwing of your Countenance,  
And with a penetrating Eye,  
Into th' abstrusest Learning pry,  
Know more of any Trade b' a hint,  
Than those that have been bred up in't,  
And yet have no Art true, or false  
To help your own bad Naturals ?  
But still the more you strive t' appear,  
Are found to be the wretcheder.

For Fools are known by looking wise,  
 As Men find Woodcocks by their Eies.  
 Hence 'tis, that 'cause y' have gai'nd o'th' *Colledge*,  
 A Quarter-share (at most) of Knowledge,  
 And brought in none, but spent Repute,  
 Y' assume a Pow'r as absolute  
 To Judge and Censure, and Controll,  
 As if you were the sole Sir *Poll*  
 And saucily pretend to know  
 More then your Dividend comes to,  
 You'll find the thing will not be done,  
 With Ignorance, and Face alone :  
 No though y' have purchas'd to your Name,  
 In History so great a Fame,  
 That now your Talent's so well known,  
 For having all belief outgrown ;  
 That ev'ry strange Prodigious Tale  
 Is measur'd by your *German Scale*,——



By which the *Virtuosi* try  
The Magnitude of ev'ry Ly,  
Cast up to what it does amount :  
And place the big'st to your account.  
That all those stories that are lay'd  
Too truly to you, and those made,  
Are now still charg'd upon your score,  
And lesser Authors nam'd no more.  
Alas that Faculty destroys  
Those soonest, it designs to raise.  
And all your vain Renown will spoil,  
As Guns o're-charg'd the more recoil.  
Though he that has but Impudence  
To all things has a fair Pretence  
And put among his wants, but shame,  
To all the World may lay his claim :  
Though you have try'd that nothing's born  
With greater ease than Publique Scorn ;

That

That all affronts do still give Place  
To your Impenetrable Face ;  
That makes your way through all affairs,  
As Pigs through Hedges creep with theirs.  
Yet as 'tis Counterfeit and Brass  
You must not think 'twill always pass ;  
For all Impostors, when they'r known,  
Are past their Labor, and undone.  
And all the best that can befall  
An Artificial Natural,  
Is that which Madmen find, as soon  
As once th' are broke loose from the Moon  
And proof against her Influence,  
Relapse to e're so little Sense  
To turn stark Fools, and Subjects fit  
For sport of Boys, and Rabble-wit.



# Annotations

## TO THE

### SECOND PART.

But now t' observe, &c.

**T**He beginning of this Second Part may perhaps seem strange and abrupt to those who do not know, that it was written of purpose, in imitation of *Virgil*, who begins the IV Book of his *Aeneides* in the very same manner, *At Regina gravi, &c.* And this is enough to satisfy the curiosity of those who believe that Invention and Fancy ought to be measur'd (like Cases in Law) by Precedents, or else they are in the power of the Critick.

A *Saxon* Duke did grow so fat.

This History of the Duke of *Saxony*, is not altogether so strange as that of a Bishop his Country-man, who was quite eaten up with Rats and Mice.

King

King *Pyrrhus* cur'd his Splenetick,  
And testy Courtiers with a kick.

*Pyrrhus* King of *Epirus*, who as *Pliny* says, had this occult Quality in his Toe, *Pollicis in dextro Pede tactu Lienosis medebatur.* L. 7. C. 11.

In close Catasta shut, &c.

*Catasta* is but a pair of Stocks in *English*, But Heroical Poetry must not admit of any vulgar word (especially of poultry signification) and therefore some of our Modern Authors are fain to import foreign words from abroad, that were never before heard of in our Language.

'Twas he that made *St. Francis* do, &c.

The Ancient Writers of the Lives of Saints, were of the same sort of People, who first writ of Knight-Errantry, and as in the one, they rendred the brave Actions of some very great Persons ridiculous, by their prodigious Lies, and sottish way of describing them: So they have abus'd the Piety of some very devout Persons, by imposing such stories upon them, as this upon *St. Francis*.

This made the beautiful Queen of *Crete*.

The History of *Pasiphae* is common enough, only this may be observ'd, That though she brought the Bull a Son and Heir; yet the Husband was fain to father

it, as appears by the Name, perhaps because the Country being an Island, he was within the four Seas, when the Infant was begotten.

As your own Secretary *Albertus*.

*Albertus Magnus* was a Sweedish Bishop, who wrote a very Learned Work, *De Secretis Mulierum*.

Unless it be to squint and laugh.

*Pliny* in his *Natural History* affirms, That *Uni animalium homini oculi depravantur, unde Cognomina Strabonum & Patorum*. Lib. 2.

As Fryar *Bacon's* Noddle was.

The Tradition of Fryar *Bacon* and the Brazen-Head, is very commonly known, and considering the times he liv'd in, is not much more strange then what another great Philosopher of his Name, has since deliver'd up of a Ring, that being ty'd in a string, and held like a Pendulum in the middle of a Silver Bowl, will vibrate of it self, and tell exactly against the sides of the Divining Cup, the same thing with, *Time is, Time was, &c.*

Or like some *Indians* Skulls so tough,  
That Authors say th'are Musket proof.

*American Indians*, among whom (the same Authors affirm) that there are others, whose Skulls are so soft, to use their own words, *Ut Digito perforari possunt*. Or

## Or Oracle from Heart of Oak.

*Jupiters Oracle in Epirus, near the City of Dodona. Ubi Nemus erat Jovi sacrum, Querneum totum in quo Jovis Dodonæi Templum fuisse narratur.*

## Semiramis of Babylon.

*Semiramis, Queen of Assyria, is said to be the first that invented Eunuchs. Semiramis teneros mares castravit omnium Prima. Am. Marcel. L. 14. p. 22. Which is something strange in a Lady of her Constitution, who is said to have receiv'd Horses into her embraces ( as another Queen did a Bull ) But that perhaps may be the reason, why she after thought Men not worth the while.*

## For some Philosophers of late here.

S. K. D. in his Book of *Bodies*; who has this story of the *German-Boy*, which he endeavors to make good by several Natural reasons; By which those who have the Dexterity to believe what they please, may be fully satisfied of the probability of it.

## A Persian Emp'r or whip'd his Granum.

*Xerxes who us'd to whip the Seas and Winds. In Corum, atque Eurum solitus sevirare flagellis, Juven. Sat. 10.*

## So the ancient Stoicks in their Porch.

*In Porticu ( Stoicorum Scholâ Athenis ) Discipulorum seditionibus, mille Quadringenti triginta Cives interfecti sunt*

Diog. Laert. *in vita Zenonis* p. 383. Those old *Virtuoso's* were better Proficients in those Exercifes, than the Modern, who feldom improve higher than Cuffing, and Kicking.

### That *Bonum* is an Animal.

*Bonum* is fuch a kind of Animal, as our Modern *Virtuofi*, from Don *Quixot*, will have Windmills under fail to be. The fame Authors are of opinion, That all Ships are Fifhes while they are afloat, but when they are run on ground, or laid up in the Dock, become Ships again.

### -----In a Town

There liv'd a Cobler, and but one.

This History of the Cobler has been attested by Persons of good credit, who were upon the place when it was done.

### Have been exchang'd for Tubs of Ale.

The Knight was kept Prifoner in *Exeter*, and after feveral exchanges propos'd, but none accepted of, was at laft releas'd for a Barrel of Ale, as he often us'd, upon all occasions, to declare.

### Bore a Slave with him in his Chariot.

— *Et sibi Consul.*

*Ne placeat, curru servus portatur eodem* Juven. Sat 10.

### Hung out their Mantles *Della Guer*.

*Tunica Coccinea solebat pridie quam dimicandum esset, supra*  
Pra-



*Prætorium poni quasi admonitio & indicium futura Pug-  
na* Lipsius in Tacit. p. 56.

### Next Links and Torches, &c.

That the Roman Emperors were wont to have Torches  
born before them ( by day ) in publick, appears by  
*Herodion in Portinace.* Lip. in Tacit. p. 16.

### Vespasian being daub'd with Dirt.

C. Cæsar succensens, propter curam verrendis viis non adhi-  
bitam, Luto jussit oppleri, congesto per milites in prætexta  
sinum. Sueton in Vespas. Ca. 5.

### Has not this present Parliament, A Ledger to the Devil sent ?

The Witchfinder in *Suffolk*, who in the Presbyterian  
times had a Commission to discover Witches, ( of  
whom ( right or wrong ) he caus'd 60 to be hang'd  
within the compass of one year, and among the rest an  
old Minister, who had been a painful Preacher for ma-  
ny years.

### Did he not help the Dutch to purge.

### At Antwerp their Cathedral Church ?

In the beginning of the Civil Wars of *Flanders*, the com-  
mon people of *Antwerp*, in a tumult, broke open the  
Cathedral Church ; to demolish Images and Shrines :  
and did so much mischief in a small time, that *Strada*  
writes, There were several Devils seen very busie  
among them, otherwise it had been impossible.

Sing

Sing Catches to the Saints at *Mascon*.

This Devil of *Mascon* deliver'd all his Oracles, like his Forefathers, in Verse, which he sung to Tunes : He made several Lampoons upon the Hugonots, and foretold them many things, which afterwards came to pass ; as may be seen in his *Memoires*, written in *French*.

Appear in divers shapes to *Kelly*,  
And speak i'th' Nun at *London's Belly*.

The History of Dr. *Dee* and the Devil, published by *Mer. Causabon, Isac. Fil.* Prebend of *Canterbury*, has a large account of all those Passages ; in which the stile of the true and false Angels appears to be penn'd by one and the same person. The Nun of *London in France*, and all her tricks have been seen by many Persons of Quality of this Nation, yet living, who have made very good observations upon the French Book written upon that occasion.

Meet with the Parliaments Committee  
At *Woodstock* on a Pers'nal Treaty.

A Committee of the long Parliament sitting in the Kings House in *Woodstock-Park*, were terrify'd with several Apparitions, the particulars whereof were then the News of the whole Nation.

At *Sarum* took a Cavalier.

*Wirbers* has a long story in Doggerel, of a Soldier of the Kings Army, who being a Prisoner at *Salisbury*, and  
drink

drinking a health to the Devil upon his knees, was carried away by him through a single pane of Glass.

Since old *Hodg-Bacon*.

*Roger Bacon*, commonly called *Fryar Bacon*, liv'd in the Reign of our *Edward* the I. and for some little skill he had in the *Mathematicks*, was, by the Rabble, accounted a Conjuror, and had the sottish story of the *Brazen Head* father'd upon him, by the ignorant Monks of those days. *Robert Grosthead* was Bishop of *Lincoln* in the Reign of *Hen. III.* He was a Learned Man for those times, and for that reason suspected by the Clergy to be a Conjuror, for which crime being degraded by Pope *Innocent* the IV. and Summon'd to appear at *Rome*, he appeal'd to the Tribunal of Christ; which our Lawyers say is illegal, if not a *Præmunire*, for offering to sue in a Foreign Court.

Which *Socrates* and *Chærephon*

In vain assay'd so long agoe.

*Aristophanes* in his Comedy of the Clouds brings in *Socrates* and *Chærephon*, measuring the Leap of a Flea, from the ones Beard to the others.

Was rais'd by him, found out by *Fisk*.

This *Fisk* was a late famous Astrologer, who flourish'd about the time of *Subtle* and *Face*, and was equally celebrated by *Ben. Johnson*.

Unless it be that Cannon-ball.

This experiment was try'd by some Foreign *Virtuoso's* who planted a Piece of Ordnance point-blanc against the

the *Zenith*, and having fir'd it, the Bullet never rebounded back again, which made them all conclude, that it sticks in the mark ; but *Des Cartes* was of opinion, That it does but hang in the Air.

As lately was reveal'd to *Sedgwyck*.

This *Sedgwyck* had many Persons ( and some of Quality ) that believ'd in him, and prepar'd to keep the day of Judgment with him, but were disappointed ; for which the false Prophet was afterwards call'd by the name of *Doomesday Sedgwyck*.

Your Modern *Indian Magician*,  
Makes but a hole in th' Earth to piss in.

This compendious new way of Magick is affirm'd by Monsieur *Le Blanc* ( in his Travels ) to be us'd in the *East-Indies*.

*Bumbastus* kept a Devils Bird, &c.

*Paracelsus* is said to have kept a small Devil pris'ner in the Pommel of his Sword, which was the reason, perhaps, why he was so valiant in his Drink ; Howsoever it was to better purpose than *Annibal* carry'd poison in his, to dispatch himself, if he should happen to be surpriz'd in any great extremity, for the Sword would have done the Feat alone, much better, and more Soldier-like. And it was below the Honor of so great a Commander, to go out of the World like a Rat.

*Agrippa* kept a *Stygian Pug*.

*Cornelius Agrippa* had a Dog, that was suspected to be a Spirit

Spirit, for some tricks he was wont to do, beyond the capacity of a Dog, as it was thought; but the Author of *Magia Adamica* has taken a great deal of pains to vindicate both the Doctor and the Dog, from that aspersion, in which he has shown a very great respect and kindness for them both.

As *Averrhois* play'd but a mean trick.

*Averrhois Astronomiam propter Excentricos contempsit.* Phil. Melancton in Elem. Phys. p. 781.

The Median Emp'ror dreamt his Daughter.

*Astyages* King of *Media* had this Dream of his Daughter *Mandane*, and the Interpretation from the *Magi*, wherefore he married her to a *Persian* of mean quality, by whom she had *Cyrus*, who conquer'd all *Asia*, and translated the Empire from the *Medes* to the *Persians*. Herodot. L. 1.

When *Cæsar* in the Senate fell.

*Fiunt aliquando Prodigiosi, & longiores Solis Defectus, quales occiso Cæsare Dictatore & Antoniano Bello, totius Anni Pallore continuo,* Plin.

*Augustus* having b' oversight, &c.

*Divus Augustus Levum sibi prodidit calceum prapostere indutum, quo die seditione Militum propè afflictus est,*

Idem. Lib. 2.

The Roman Senate when within,

The City Walls an Owl was seen.

*Romani L. Crasso & C. Maria Coss. Bubo viso orbem illustrabant.*

For

For *Anaxagoras* long ago,  
Saw Hills, as well as you, i'th' Moon.

*Anaxagoras affirmabat Solem Candens Ferrum esse, & Peloponesso majorem: Lunam habitacula in se habere, & Colles, & Valles. Fertur dixisse Cælum omne ex Lapidibus esse Compositum; Damnatus & in exilium pulsus est, quod impie, Solem Candentem laminam esse dixisset. Diogen. Laert. in Anaxag. p. 11. 13.*

The *Ægyptians* say, the Sun has twice  
Shifted his Setting and his Rise.

*Ægyptii Decem millia Annorum, & amplius, recensent; & observatum est in hoc tanto Spatio, bis mutata esse Loca Ortuum & Occasuum solis; ita ut Sol bis ortus sit ubi nunc occidit, & bis descenderit ubi nunc oritur. Phil. Melanct. Lib. 1. p. 60.*

Some hold the Heavens like a Top,  
Are kept by Circulation up.

*Causa quare Cælum non cadit, (secundum Empedoclem) est velocitas sui motus, Comment. in L. 2. Aristot. de Cælo.*

Plato believ'd the Sun and Moon  
Below all other Planets run.

*Plato Solem & Lunam cæteris Planetis inferiores esse putavit. G. Cuning. in Cosmogr. L. 1. p. 11.*

The



The Learned Scaliger complain'd.

*Copernicus in Libris Revolutionum, deinde Reinholdus, post etiam Stadius, Mathematici nobiles perspicuis Demonstrationibus docuerunt, solis Apsida Terris esse propriorem, quam Ptolomæi ætate duodecim partibus, i. e. uno & triginta terræ semidiametris. Jo. Bod. Met. Hist. p. 455.*

Cardan believ'd great States depend, &c.

*Putat Cardanus, ab extrema Cauda Helices seu Majoris ursæ omne magnum Imperium pendere. Id. p. 325.*

Than th' old Chaldean Conjurers  
In so many hundred thousand years.

*Chaldei jactant se quadringinta septuaginta Annorum millia in periclitandis, experiundisque Puerorum Animis posuisse. Cicero.*

Like Money by the Druids borrow'd, &c.

*Druidæ pecuniam mutuo accipiebant in Posteriore vita redituri. Patricius Tom. 2. p. 97.*

That paultry story is untrue,  
And forg'd to cheat such Gulls as you.

There was a notorious Idiot (that is here describ'd by the Name and Character of *Whacum*) who counterfeited a Second Part of *Hudibras*, as untowardly as Captain *Po*, who could not write himself, and yet made a shift to stand on the Pillory, for Forging other



other Mens Hands, as his Fellow *Whachum*, no doubt deserv'd; in whose abominable Doggerel This story of *Hudibras* and a French Mountebank at *Bremford-Fair* is as properly describ'd.

That the vibration of this Pendulum,  
Shall make all Taylors Yards, of one  
Unanimous opinion.

The device of the Vibration of a Pendulum, was intended to settle a certain Measure of Ells and Yards, &c. ( that should have its foundation in Nature ) all the World over; For by swinging a weight at the end of a string, and calculating ( by the motion of the Sun, or any Star ) how long the Vibration would last, in proportion to the length of the String, and weight of the Pendulum; they thought to reduce it back again, and from any part of time, compute the exact length of any string, that must necessarily vibrate in so much space of time: So that if a man should ask in *China* for a Quarter of an Hour of *Satin* or *Taffeta*, they would know perfectly what it meant. And all Mankind learn a new way to measure things no more by the Yard, Foot, or Inch, but by the Hour, Quarter, and Minute.

Before the Secular Prince of Darkness.

As the Devil is the spiritual Prince of Darkness, so is the Constable the Secular, who governs in the night with as great Authority as his Colleague, but far more imperiously.

F I N I S.

# HUDIBRAS.

---

THE

Third and Last

PART.

---

Written by the AUTHOUR

OF THE

FIRST and SECOND PARTS.

---

LONDON,

Printed for Robert Horne, and are to be sold by  
*Tho. Basset* at the George in Fleet-street. 1684.

HUDIBRAS.

THE

Life and Death

Licensed and Enter'd according to  
the Act of Parliament for Print-  
ing.



RECEIVED

W. H. & C.

First and Second Parts.

LONDON.

Printed for J. & W. Smith, Strand, and J. & W. Smith, Pall Mall, 1801.

# HUDIBRAS.

The Third and Last Part.

## The ARGUMENT of the FIRST CANTO of the Third Part.

*The Knight and Squire resolve at once,  
The one the other to renounce.  
They both approach the Ladie's Bower,  
The Squire t'inform, the Knight to woo her.  
She treats them with a Masquerade,  
By Faries and Hobgoblins made:  
From which the Squire conveys the Knight,  
And steals him, from himself, by Night.*

## CANTO I.

**T**IS true, no Lover has that Pow'r  
T'enforce a desperate Amour,  
As he that has two Strings to's Bow,  
And burns for Love and Money too:  
For then he's brave and Resolute,  
Disdains to render in his Suit,

Has all his *Flames* and *Raptures* double,  
And *hangs* or *drowns* with half the trouble.  
While those who sillily pursue  
The simple downright way, and true,  
Make as unlucky Applications,  
And steer against the Stream their Passions.  
Some forge their *Mistresses* of *Stars*,  
And when the Ladies prove averse,  
And more untoward to be won,  
Than by *Caligula* the *Moon*,  
Cry out upon the Stars for doing  
Ill Offices to cross their *wooing* ;  
When onely by themselves they'r hindred,  
For trusting *those they made her Kindred*:  
And still the harsher and hide-bounder  
The Damsels prove, become the sonder.  
For what mad Lover ever dy'd,  
To gain a soft and gentle *Bride* ?  
Or for a Lady tender-hearted,  
In *purling* Streams or *Hemp* departed ?

Leap'd

Leap'd headlong int' *Elizium*,  
'Through th' Windows of a *dazling Room*?  
But for some cross ill-natur'd Dame,  
The amo'rous Fly burnt in his *flame*.  
This to the *Knight* could be no *News*,  
With all Mankind so much in use ;  
Who therefore took the wiser course,  
To make the most of his *Amours*,  
Resolv'd to try all sorts of ways,  
As follows in due *Time* and *Place*.

No sooner was the bloody Fight  
Between the *Wizard* and the *Knight*  
With all th' Appurtenances over,  
But he relaps'd again t' a *Lover* :  
As he was always wont to doe  
When h' had discomfited a Foe,  
And us'd the only *Antick Philters*  
Deriv'd from old *Heroick Tilters*.

But now Triumphant and Victorious,  
He held th' Achievement was too glorious  
For such a Conquerour, to meddle  
With *Petty Constable*, or *Beadle* ;  
Or fly for Refuge to the *Hostess*  
Of th' Inns of Court and Chancery, *Justice* :  
Who might, perhaps, reduce his Cause  
To th' *Ordeal Tryal* of the Laws ;  
Where none escape, but such as branded  
With red-hot Irons have past *Bare-banded* ;  
And if they cannot read one *Verse*  
*It's Psalms*, must sing it, and that's worse.  
He therefore, judging it below him,  
To tempt a shame the *Devil might owe him*,  
Resolv'd to leave the Squire for *Bail*  
And *Mainprize* for him, to the *Gaol*,  
To answer, with his Vessel, all  
That might disastrously befall.  
He thought it now the fittest juncture,  
To give the Lady a Rencounter ;



T' acquaint her with his Expedition,  
And Conquest o're the *fierce Magician*;  
Describe the manner of the Fray,  
And shew the spoils he brought away;  
His bloody *Scourging* aggravate,  
The Number of the Blows and Weight:  
All which might probably succeed,  
And gain belief h' had done the deed.  
Which he resolv'd t' enforce, and spare  
No pawning of his Soul, to swear;  
But, rather than produce his Back:  
To set his Conscience on the Rack:  
And, in pursuance of his urging  
Of Articles perform'd, and scourging,  
And all things else-upon his part,  
Demand deliv'ry of her Heart,  
Her Goods, and Chattels, and good Graces,  
And Person, up to his embraces.

Thought he, the ancient *Errant Knights*  
Won all their Ladies Hearts in *Fights*,  
And cut whole Giants into Fitters,  
To put them into amorous twitters;  
Whose stubborn Bowels scorn'd to yield  
Until their Gallants were half kill'd :  
But when their Bones were drubb'd so sore  
They durst not *wooe one Combat* more,  
The Ladies Hearts began to melt,  
Subdu'd with Blows their Lovers felt.  
So *Spanish Heroes* with their Lances  
At once wound *Bulls* and *Ladies fancies* :  
And he acquires the noblest Spouse  
That Widows greatest Herds of Cows.  
Then what may I expect to do,  
Wh' have quell'd so vast a *Buffalo* ?

Mean while the Squire was on his way,  
The Knight's *late Orders* to obey ;

Who

Who sent him for a *strong Detachment*  
Of *Beadles, Constables, and Watchmen,*  
T'attack the *Cunning-man* for Plunder  
Committed falsely on his Lumber,  
When he, who had so lately sack'd  
The Enemy, had done the Fact,  
Had rifled all his Pokes and Fobs  
Of *Gimcracks, Whims* and *Jiggumbobs,*  
Which he by hook or crook had gather'd,  
And for his own Inventions father'd:  
And when they should, at *Gaol-delivery,*  
Unriddle one another's Thievery,  
Both might have evidence enough  
To render neither halter-proof.  
He thought it desperate to tarry,  
And venture to be *Accessory*:  
But rather wisely slip his Fetters,  
And leave them for the *Knight, his Betters.*  
He call'd to mind th' unjust foul play  
He would have offer'd him that day,

To

To make him curry his own Hide,  
 Which no Beast ever did beside,  
 Without all possible evasion,  
 But of the *Riding Dispensation*.  
 And therefore much about the hour,  
 The Knight ( for reasons told before )  
 Resolv'd to leave him to the Fury  
 Of *Justice* and an *unpack'd Jury*,  
 The *Squire* concurr'd t' abandon him,  
 And serve him in the self-same Trim ;  
 T' acquaint the *Lady* what h' had done,  
 And what he meant to carry on ;  
 What *Project* 'twas he went about,  
 When *Sidrophel* and he fell out ;  
 His firm and stedfast Resolution,  
 To swear her to an *Execution* ;  
 To pawn his inward Ears, to marry her.  
 And Bribe the Devil himself to carry her.  
 In which both dealt, as if they meant  
 Their *Party Saints* to represent,

Who

Who never fail'd, upon their sharing  
In any Prosperous *Arms-Bearing*,  
To lay themselves out, to supplant  
Each other *Cosin-German Saint*.  
But e'r the *Knight* could do his Part,  
The *Squire* had got so much the Start,  
H'had to the *Lady* done his Errand,  
And told her all his Tricks afore-hand.  
Just as he finish'd his Report,  
The *Knight* alighted in the Court ;  
And having ty'd his Beast t' a Pale,  
And taken time for both to stale,  
He put his Band and Beard in order,  
The Sprucer to accost and board her ;  
And now began t' approach the Door :  
When she, wh' had spy'd him out before,  
Convey'd th' *Informer* out of sight,  
And went to entertain the *Knight*.  
With whom encountring after *Longees*  
Of humble and *submissive Congees*.

And

And all *due Ceremonies* paid,  
He stroak'd his Beard, and thus he said:  
*Madam, I do, as is my Duty,*  
*Honour the Shadow of your Shoe-tye:*  
*And now am come, to bring your Ear*  
*A Present you'l be glad to hear ;*  
*At least I hope so. The thing's done,*  
*Or may I never see the Sun ;*  
*For which I humbly now demand*  
*Performance at your gentle Hand :*  
*And that you'd please to do your part,*  
*As I have done mine to my smart.*  
With that he shrugg'd his sturdy Back,  
As if he felt his Shoulders ake.  
But she, who well enough knew what  
( Before he spoke ) he would be at,  
Pretended not to apprehend  
The Mystery of what he mean'd :  
And therefore wish'd him to expound  
His dark expressions *less profound.*

*Madam,*

Madam, quoth he, I come to prove  
How much I've suffer'd for your Love,  
Which ( like your Votary ) to win,  
I have not spar'd my tatter'd skin :  
And, for those meritorious Lashes,  
To claim your favour and good Graces,  
Quoth she, I do remember once  
I freed you from th' enchanted Sconce ;  
And that you promis'd, for that favour,  
To bind your Back to th' good Behaviour,  
And for my Sake and Service vow'd  
To lay upon't a heavy Load,  
And what 'twould bear t' a scruple prove,  
As other Knights do oft make love.  
Which, whether you have done or no,  
Concerns your self, not me, to know.  
But if you have, I shall Confess,  
T' are honefter than I could guess.  
Quoth he, If you suspect my troth,  
I cannot prove it but by Oath ;

And



*And, if you make a question on't;  
I'll pawn my Soul, that I have don't.  
And he that makes his Soul his Surety,  
I think, does give the best security.  
Quoth she, Some say, the Soul's secure  
Against Distress and Forfeiture;  
Is free from Action, and exempt  
From Execution and Contempt;  
And to be summon'd to appear  
In th' other World, s' illegal here:  
And therefore few make any account,  
Int' what incumbrances they run't.  
For most men carry things so even  
Between this World, and Hell and Heaven,  
Without the least offence to either,  
They freely deal in all together;  
And equally abhor to quit  
This World for both, or both for it.  
And when they pawn and damn their Souls,  
They are but Pris'ners on Parols.*

For

For that, quoth he, 'tis rational,  
They may be accomptable in all.  
For when there is that intercourse  
Between Divine and Humane Pow'rs,  
That all that we determine here  
Commands Obedience every where ;  
When Penalties may be commuted  
For Fines, or Ears, and Executed ;  
It follows, nothing binds so fast  
As Souls in Pawn and Mortgage past:  
For Oaths are th' only Tests and Scales  
Of right and wrong, and true and false.  
And there's no other way to try  
The Doubts of Law and Justice by:  
Quoth she, What is it you would swear?  
There's no believing till I hear:  
For till th' are understood, all Tales  
(Like Nonsense) are not True, nor False.  
Quoth he, When I resolv'd t' obey  
What you commanded th' other day:

And

*And to perform my Exercise,  
(As Schools are wont) for your fair eyes;  
T' avoid all Scruples in the Case,  
I went to do't upon the Place.  
But as the Castle is enchanted  
By Sidrophel the Witch, and haunted  
With evil Spirits, as you know,  
Who took my Squire and me for two;  
Before I'd hardly time to lay  
My weapons by, and dis-array,  
I heard a Formidable Noise,  
Loud as the Stentrophonick Voice,  
That Roar'd far off, Dispatch and Strip,  
I'm ready with th' Infernal Whip,  
That shall deuest thy Ribs of Skin,  
To expiate thy lingring Sin.  
Th' hast broke perfidiously thy Oath,  
And not perform'd thy plighted Troth;  
But spar'd thy Renegado Back,  
Where th' hadst so great a Prize at Stake.*

*Which*

*Which now the Fates have order'd me  
For Penance, and Revenge to Flay;  
Unless thou presently make haste.*

*Time is, Time was : and there it ceas'd.  
With which though startled, I confess,  
Yet th' Horror of the thing was less  
Than th' other Dismal apprehension  
Of Interruption or Prevention.*

*And therefore snatching up the Rod,  
I laid upon my Back a load;  
Resolv'd to spare no Flesh and Blood,  
To make my Word and Honour good.  
Till tir'd, and taking Truce at length,  
For new Recruits of Breath and Strength,  
I felt the Blows still ply'd as fast,  
As if th' had been by Lovers plac'd  
In Raptures of Platonick Lashing,  
And chaste Contemplative Bardashing.  
When facing hastily about,  
To stand upon my Guard and Scout,*

B

I found

I found th' Infernal Cunning -man,  
And th' Under-witch, his Caliban,  
With Scourges (like the Furies) arm'd,  
That on my outward Quarters storm'd.  
In haste I snatch'd my Weapon up,  
And gave their Hellish Rage a stop;  
Call'd thrice upon your Name, and fell  
Courageously on Sidrophel:  
Who now transform'd himself t' a Bear,  
Began to roar aloud and tear;  
When I as furiously prest on,  
My Weapon down his Throat to run,  
Laid hold on him: but he brok loose,  
And turn'd himself into a Goose,  
Div'd under Water, in a Pond,  
To hide himself from being found.  
In vain I sought him, but as soon  
As I perceiv'd him fled and gone,  
Prepar'd with equal Haste and Rage,  
His Under-Sorcerer t' ingage.

But

But bravely Scorning to defile  
My Sword with feeble bloud and vile;  
I judg'd it better from a Quick-  
Set-Hedge to cut a knotted Stick,  
With which I furiously laid on;  
Till in a harsh and dolefull tone  
It roar'd, Oh hold for pittie, Sir,  
I am too great a Sufferer,  
Abus'd, as you have been, b' a Witch,  
But conjur'd int' a worse Caprich:  
Who sends me out on many a Jaunt,  
Old Houses in the Night to haunt,  
For opportunities t' improve  
Designs of Thievery or Love;  
With Drugs convey'd in Drink or Meat,  
All Feats of Witches counterfeit;  
Kill Pigs and Geese with poudred Glass,  
And make it for Inchantments pass,  
With Cow-itch meazle like a Leper,  
And choak with Fumes of Guiny-Pepper;

*Make Lechers and their Punks with Dewtry  
Commit phantastical Advowtry ;  
Bewitch Hermetick-men to run  
Stark staring mad with Manicon ;  
Believe Mechanick Virtuosi  
Can raise 'em Mountains in Potosi ;  
And sillier than the Antick Fools,  
Take Treasure for a Heap of Coals :  
Seek out for Plants with Signatures,  
To Quack of Universal Cures ;  
With Figures ground on panes of Glass,  
Make People on their Heads to pass ;  
And mighty heaps of Coyn increase,  
Reflected from a single piece :  
To draw in Fools, whose Nat'ral Itches  
Incline perpetually to Witches ;  
And keep me in continual Fears,  
And Danger of my Neck and Ears :  
When less Delinquent have been scourg'd,  
And Hemp on wooden Anvils forg'd,*

*Which*



*Which others for Cravats have worn  
About their Necks, and took a Turn.  
I pity'd the sad Punishment  
The wretched Caitiff underwent,  
And held my Drubbing of his Bones  
Too great an Honour for Pultrones;  
For Knights are bound to feel no Blows  
From paltry and unequal Foes,  
Who when they flash and cut to pieces,  
Do all with civillest Addressees:  
Their Horses never give a Blow,  
But when they make a Leg and Bow.  
I therefore spar'd his Flesh, and prest him  
About the Witch, with many a Question.  
Quoth he, *For many Years he drove  
A kind of Broking-Trade in Love,  
Employ'd in all th' Intrigues and Trust  
Of feeble Speculative Lust;  
Procurer to th' Extravagancy  
And crazy Ribaldry of Fancy.**

By those the Devil had forsook,  
As things below to him, to provoke.  
But b'ing a Vertuoso, able  
To Smatter, Quack, and Cant, and Dabble,  
He held his Talent most Adroit  
For any Mystical Exploit;  
As others of his Tribe had done,  
And rais'd their Prizes Three to One.  
For one Predicting Pimp has th' Ods  
Of Chauldrons of plain downright Bands,  
But as an Elf (the Devil's Valet)  
Is not so slight a thing to get,  
For those that do his business best,  
In Hell are us'd the ruggedest;  
Before so meriting a Person  
Could get a Grant, but in Reversion,  
He serv'd two Prentiships and longer  
I th' Myst'ry of a Lady-Monger.  
For (as some write) A Witch's Ghost,  
As soon as from the Body loos'd,

Becomes

*Becomes a Puiny-Imp it self,  
And is another Witche's Elf.  
He after searching far and near,  
At length found one in Lancashire,  
With whom he bargain'd beforehand,  
And, after Hanging, entertain'd.  
Since which h' has plaid a thousand Feats,  
And practis'd all Mechanick Cheats:  
Transform'd himself to th' ugly Shapes  
Of Wolves, and Bears, Baboons, and Apes;  
Which he has vary'd more than Witches,  
Or Pharaoh's Wizards could their Switches;  
And 'all with whom h' has had to do,  
Turn'd to as Monstrous Figures too.  
Witness my self, whom h' has abus'd,  
And to this Beastly shape reduc'd,  
By feeding me on Beans and Pease,  
He crams in nasty Crevises,  
And turns to Comfits by his Arts,  
To make me relish for Disserts,*

*And one by one with Shame and Fear  
Lick up the candid Provender.  
Beside----But as h' was running on,  
To tell what other Feats h' had done,  
The Lady stopt his full Career,  
And told him, now 'twas time to hear:  
If half these things (said she) be true,  
(Th' are all (quoth he) I swear by you;)   
Why then (said she) that Sidrophel  
Has damn'd himself to th' Pit of Hell;  
Who, mounted on a Broom, the Nag  
And Hackney of a Lapland Hag,  
In Quest of you came hither Post,  
Within an Hour (I'm sure) at most;  
Who told me all you swear and say,  
Quite contrary another way;  
Vow'd, that you came to him to know  
If you should carry me or no;  
And would have hir'd him and his Imps,  
To be your Match-makers and Pimps,*

T'in-

*To ingage the Devil on your Side,  
And steal (like Proserpine) your Bride.  
But he disdaining to embrace  
So filthy a Design, and base,  
You fell to vapouring and huffing,  
And drew upon him, like a Ruffin;  
Surpriz'd him meanly, unprepar'd,  
Before h' had time to mount his Guard;  
And left him dead upon the Ground,  
With many a Bruise, and desperate wound:  
Swore you had broke and rob'd his House,  
And stole his Talismanique Louse,  
And all his New-found Old Inventions,  
With flat Felonious Intentions;  
Which he could bring out, where he had,  
And what he bought 'em for and paid;  
His Flea, his Morpion, and Punese,  
H' had gotten for his proper ease,  
And all in perfect Minutes made,  
By th' ablest Artists of the Trade;*

*Which*

*Which ( he could prove it ) since he lost,  
He has been eaten up almost ;  
And all together might amount  
To many hundreds on account :  
For which h' had got sufficient warrant  
To seize the Malefactors Errant,  
Without capacity of Bail,  
But of a Cart's or Horse's Tail ;  
And did not doubt to bring the Wretches,  
To serve for Pendulums to Watches ;  
Which modern Virtuoso's say,  
Incline to Hanging every way.  
Beside he swore, and swore 'twas true,  
That er'e he went in Quest of you,  
He set a Figure to discover  
If you were fled to Rye or Dover ;  
And found it clear, that, to betray  
Your selves and me, you fled this way ;  
And that he was upon pursuit,  
To take you somewhere hereabout.*

He

He vow'd he had had Intelligence  
Of all that past before and since:  
And found, that ere you came to him,  
It had been ingaging Life and Lim  
About a case of tender Conscience,  
Where both abounded in your own Sence;  
Till Ralpho, by his Light and Grace,  
Had clear'd all Scruples in the Case;  
And prov'd that you might swear, and own  
Whatever's by the Wicked done.

For which, most basely to requite  
The Service of his Gifts and Light,  
You strove to oblige him by main force,  
To Scourge his Ribs instead of yours,  
But that he stood upon his Guard,  
And all your vapouring out-dar'd:  
For which, between you both, the Feat  
Has never been perform'd as yet.

While thus the Lady talk'd, the Knight  
Turn'd the outside of his eyes to white.

(As



(*As Men of Inward Light are wont  
To turn their Opticks in upon't.*)

He wonder'd how she came to know  
What he had done, and meant to do ;  
Held up his *Affidavit hand*,  
As if h' had been to be arraign'd :  
Cast tow' rds the Door a ghastly Look,  
In dread of *Sidrophel*, and spoke.  
*Madam, if but one Word be true  
Of all the Wizard has told you,  
Or but one single Circumstance  
In all th' Apocryphal Romance,  
May dreadful Earthquakes swallow down  
This Vessel, that is all your own ;  
Or may the Heavens fall, and cover  
These Reliques of your constant Lover.  
You have provided well, quoth she,  
(I thank you) for your self and me ;  
And shewn your Presbyterian Wits  
Jump punctual with the Jesuits.*

*A most*

*A most compendious way and civil,  
At once to cheat the World, the Devil,  
And Heav'n and Hell, your selves and Those  
On whom you vainly think t' impose.  
Why then (quoth he) may Hell surprize.  
That trick (said she) will not pass twice :  
I've learn'd how far I'm to believe  
Your pinning Oaths upon your Sleeve.  
But there's a better way of Clearing  
What you would prove, than downright Swearing;  
For if you have perform'd the Feat,  
The Blows are visible as yet  
Enough to serve for satisfaction  
Of nicest scruples in the Action.  
And if you can produce those Knobs,  
Although th' are but the Witche's Drubs,  
I'll pass them all upon account,  
As if your natural self had dont.  
Provided that they pass th' Opinion  
Of able Juries of old Women,*

*Who*

*Who, us'd to judge all matt'r of Facts  
For Bellies, may do so for Backs.*

*Madam, (quoth he) your Love's a Million,  
To do is less than to be willing,  
As I am, were it in my pow'r,  
T' obey what you command, and more.  
But for performing what you bid,  
I thank you as much as if I did.  
You know I ought to have a care  
To keep my Wounds from taking Air:  
For Wounds in those that are all Heart  
Are dangerous in any Part.*

*I find (quoth she) my Goods and Chattels  
Are like to prove but mere drawn Battels;  
For still the longer we contend,  
We are but farther off the end.  
But granting now we should agree,  
What is it you expect from me?*

*Your*

*Your plighted Faith (quoth he) and Word  
You past in Heaven on Record,  
Where all Contracts, to have and t' hold,  
Are everlastingly inroll'd.*

*And if 'tis counted Treason, here  
To race Records, 'tis much more there.  
Quoth she, There are no Bargains driv'n  
Nor Marriages clapp'd up in Heaven:  
And that's the reason, as some guess,  
There is no Heav'n in Marriages;  
Two things that naturally press  
Too narrowly, to be at ease.  
Their bus'ness there is onely Love,  
Which Marriage is not like t' improve.  
Love, that's too generous, t' abide  
To be against its Nature ty'd:  
For where 'tis of it self inclin'd,  
It breaks loose when it is confin'd;  
And, like the Soul, its harbourer,  
Debarr'd the freedom of the Air,*

*Disdains*

*Disdains against its will to stay;  
But struggles out, and flies away :  
And therefore never can comply,  
T' endure the Matrimonial tye,  
That binds the Female and the Male;  
Where th' one is but the other's Bail ;  
Like Roman Gaolers, when they slept,  
Chain'd to the Prisoners they kept.  
Of which the True and Faithfullst Lover  
Gives best security to suffer.*

*Marriage is but a Beast, some say,  
That carries double in foul way ;  
And therefore 'tis not to b' admir'd  
It should so suddenly be tir'd :  
A Bargain at a venture made  
Between two Part'ners in a Trade,  
(For what's inferr'd by T' have and t' hold,  
But something past away, and sold ? )*

*That as it makes but one of two,  
Reduces all things else as low :  
And at the best is but a Mart  
Between the one and th' other part,  
That on the Marriage-day is paid,  
Or hour of Death, the Bet it laid.  
And all the rest of Bett'r or worse  
Both are but losers out of Purse.  
For when upon their ungot Heirs  
Th' intail themselves, and all that's theirs,  
What blinder Bargain e're was driven,  
Or Wager laid at six and seven ?  
To pass themselves away, and turn  
Their Children's Tenants e're th' are born ?  
Beg one another Idiot  
To Guardians, e're they are begot ;  
Or ever shall, perhaps, by th' one,  
Who's bound to vouch 'em for his own,  
Though got b' Implicit Generation,  
And General Club of all the Nation :*

*For which she's fortify'd no less  
Then all the Island, with four Seas  
Exacts the Tribute of her Dow'r  
In ready Insolence and Pow'r ;  
And makes him pass away, to Have  
And Hold, to her, himself, her slave,  
More wretched then an Ancient Villain,  
Condemnd to Drudgery and Tilling ;  
While all he does upon the By,  
She is not bound to justifie,  
Nor at her proper cost and charge  
Maintain the Feats he does at large.  
Such hideous Sots were those obedient  
Old Vassals to their Ladies Regent ;  
To give the Cheats the Eldest hand  
In Foul Play, by the Laws o' th' Land ;  
For which so many a legal Cuckold  
Has been run down in Courts, and truckled.*



*A Law that most unjustly yokes  
All Johns of Stiles to Joans of Nokes,  
Without distinction of Degree,  
Condition, Age, or Quality;  
Admits no Pow'r of Revocation,  
Nor valuable Consideration,  
Nor Writ of Error, nor Reverse  
Of Judgement past For better or worse;  
Will not allow the Privileges  
That Beggars challenge under Hedges,  
Who, when th' are griev'd, can make dead Horses  
Their Spiritual Judges of Divorces;  
While nothing else but Rem in Re,  
Can set the proudest wretches free:  
A Slavery beyond enduring,  
But that 'tis of their own procuring.  
As Spiders never seek the Fly,  
But leave him, of himself t' apply:  
So men are by themselves betray'd,  
To quit the freedom they enjoy'd,*

*And run their Necks into a Nooze,  
They'd break 'em after, to break loose.  
As some, whom Death would not depart,  
Have done the Feat themselves by Art.  
Like Indian-Widows, gone to bed  
In flaming Curtains to the Dead :  
And Men as often dangled for't,  
And yet will never leave the Sport.*

*Nor do the Ladies want excuse  
For all the Stratagems they use,  
To gain th' advantage of the Set,  
And lurch the Amorous Rook and Cheat.  
For, as a Pythagorean Soul  
Runs through all Beasts, and Fish, and Fowl,  
And has a smack of ev'ry one ;  
So Love does, and has ever done.  
And therefore, though 'tis ne're so fond,  
Takes strangely to the Vagabond.*

*'Tis but an Ague that's reverst,  
Whose hot fit takes the Patient first,  
That after burns with cold as much  
As Ir'n in Greenland does the touch ;  
Melts in the Furnace of desire,  
Like Glass, that's but the Ice of Fire;  
And when his heat of Fancy's over,  
Becomes as hard and frail a Lover.  
For when he's with Love-powder laden,  
And Prim'd and Cock'd by Miss, or Madam,  
The smallest sparkle of an Eye  
Gives Fire to his Artillery ;  
And off the loud Oaths go, but while  
Th' are in the very Act, recoil.  
Hence 'tis, so few dare take their chance  
Without a sep'rate maintenance :  
And Widows, who have try'd one Lover,  
Trust none again, till th' have made over.  
Or if they do, before they marry,  
The Foxes weigh the Geese they carry :*

*And e're they venture o're a stream,  
Know how to size themselves and them.  
Whence witty'st Ladies aways choose  
To undertake the heaviest Goose.  
For now the World is grown so wary,  
That few of either Sex dare marry,  
But rather trust on tick t' Amours,  
The Cross and Pile for Bet'r or Worse ;  
A Mode that is held honourable,  
As well as French and fashionable.  
For when it falls out for the best,  
Where both are incommoded least,  
In Soul and Body two unite,  
To make up one Hermaphrodite ;  
Still Amorous, and Fond, and Billing,  
Like Philip and Mary on a Shilling,  
Th' have more Punçilio's and Caprices  
Between the Petticoat and Breeches,  
More petulant Extravagancies,  
Then Poets make 'em in Romances.*

*Though,*

Though, when the Heroes 'sponse the Dames,  
We here no more of Charms and Flames :  
For then their late attract's decline,  
And turn as eager as Prick'd Wine ;  
And all their Cattermaulling tricks,  
In earnest to as jealous Piques :  
Which th' Ancients wisely signify'd,  
By th' yellow Manto's of the Bride.  
For Jealousie is but a kind  
Of Clap and Grincam of the Mind,  
The natural effect of Love,  
As other Flames and Aches prove :  
But all the mischief is, the doubt  
On whose account they first broke out.  
For though Chineses go to Bed,  
And lye in in their Ladies stead,  
And for the pains they took before,  
Are nurs'd and pamper'd to do more :  
Our Green-men do it worse, when th' hap  
To fall in labour of a Clap ;

*Both lay the Child to one another :  
But who's the Father, who the Mother,  
'Tis hard to say in Multitudes,  
Or who imported the French Goods.  
But Health and Sickneſs bring all one,  
Which both ingag'd before to own,  
And are not with their Bodies bound  
To Worſhip onely when th' are ſound ;  
Both give and take their equal ſhares  
Of all they ſuffer by falſe Wares :  
A Fate no Lover can divert  
With all his caution, Wit, and Art.  
For 'tis in vain to think to gueſs  
At Women by Appearances,  
That Paint and Patch their Imperfections  
Of Intellectual Complexions,  
And daub their Tempers o're with Waſhes  
As artificial as their Faces ;  
Wear under Vizard-Masks their Talents  
And Mother Wits before their Gallants ;*

*Until*

*Until th' are hamper'd in the Nooze,  
Too fast to dream of breaking loose :  
When all the Flaws they strove to hide  
Are made unready, with the Bride,  
That with her Wedding-cloaths undresses  
Her Complaisance and Gentilefles ;  
Tries all her Arts, to take upon her  
The Government from th' easie owner,  
Until the Wretch is glad to wave  
His lawful Right, and turn her Slave ;  
Finds all his Having, - and his Holding,  
Reduc'd t' eternal Noise and Scolding,  
The Conjugal Petard, that tears  
Down all Portcullices of Ears,  
And makes the Volly of one Tongue  
For all their Leathern Shields too strong,  
When onely arm'd with Noise and Nails,  
The Female Silk-worms ride the Males,  
Transform'd 'em into Rams and Goats,  
Like Sirens with their charming Notes,*

Sweet



*Sweet as a Screech-Owl's Senerade,  
Or those enchanting murmurs made  
By th' Husband Mandrake and the Wife,  
Both bury'd (like themselves) alive.*

*Quoth he, these Reasons are but strains  
Of wanton, over-heated Brains,  
Which Ralliers in their Wit or Drink  
Do rather wheedle with, than think,  
Man was not Man in Paradise,  
Untill he was Created twice,  
And had his better half, His Bride,  
Carv'd from th' Original, his side,  
T' amend his Natural defects,  
And perfect his recruited Sex,  
Inlarge his Breed, at once, and lessen  
The Pains and Labour of increasing,  
By changing them for other cares,  
As by his dry'd up-Paps appears.*

*His Body, that stupendious Frame,  
Of all the World the Anagram,  
Is of two equal parts compact  
In Shape and Symmetry exact.  
Of which the Left and Female side  
Is to the Manly Right a Bride;  
Both joyn'd together with such Art,  
That nothing else but Death can part.  
Those Heav'nly attracts of yours, your Eyes,  
And Face, that all the World surprize,  
That dazle all that look upon ye,  
And scorch all other Ladies Tawny;  
Those ravishing and charming Graces,  
Are all made up of two Half Faces,  
That in a Mathematick Line,  
Like those in other Heavens, join.  
Of which if either grew alone,  
'Twould fright as much to look upon :  
And so would that sweet Bud, your Lip,  
Without the other's fellowship.*

*Our*

*Our Noblest Senses act by Pairs,  
Two Eyes to see, to hear two Ears ;  
Th' Intelligencers of the Mind,  
To wait upon the Soul design'd.  
But those that serve the Body alone,  
Are single and confin'd to one.  
The World is but two Parts, that meet,  
And close at th' Æquinoctial, fit ;  
And so are all the Works of Nature,  
Stamp'd with her signature on Matter ;  
Which all her Creatures, to a Leaf,  
Or smallest Blade of Grass, receive.  
All which sufficiently declare  
How intirely Marriage is her care,  
The onely method that she uses,  
In all the wonders she produces.  
And those that take their rules from her,  
Can never be deceiv'd, nor err.  
For what secures the Civil Life  
But pawns of Children and a Wife ;*

*That*

*That lie, like Hostages, at Stake,  
To pay for all Men undertake?  
To whom it is as Necessary,  
As to be born and breath, to marry;  
So Universal, all Mankind  
In nothing else is of one mind.  
For in what stupid Age, or Nation,  
Was Marriage ever out of Fashion?  
Unless among the Amazons,  
Or Vestal Friars, and Cloister'd Nuns,  
Or Stoicks, who to bar the Freaks  
And loose Excesses of the Sex,  
Preposterously would have all Women  
Turn'd up to all the World in common.  
Though Men would find such mortal Fewds  
In sharing of their publick Goods,  
'Twould put them to more charge of Lives,  
Than th' are supply'd with now by Wives;  
Until they Graze, and wear their Cloaths,  
As Beasts do, of their Native Growths:*

*For*

*For simple wearing of their Horns,  
Will not suffice to serve their turns.  
For what can we pretend & inherit,  
Unless the Marriage-deed will bear it?  
Could claim no Right to Lands or Rents,  
But for our Parents settlements.  
Had been but younger Sons o' th' Earth,  
Debarr'd it all, but for our Birth.  
What Honours, or Estates of Peers  
Could be preserv'd but by their Heirs?  
And what security maintains  
Their Right and Title, but the Banes?  
What Crowns could be Hereditary,  
If greatest Monarchs did not marry,  
And with their Consorts consummate  
Their weightiest Interest of State?  
For all th' Amours of Princes are  
But Guarranties of Peace or War.  
Or what but Marriage has a Charm,  
The Rage of Empires to disarm,*

*Make*

*Make Bloud and Desolation cease,  
And Fire and Sword unite in Peace,  
When all their fierce contests for Forrage  
Conclude in Articles of Marriage ?  
Nor does the Genial Bed provide  
Lefs for the Interests of the Bride ;  
Who else had not the least Pretence  
T as much as Due Benevolence ;  
Could no more Title take upon her  
To Vertue, Quality, and Honour,  
Than Ladies Errant, unconfin'd,  
And Feme-Coverts to all Mankind.  
All Women would be of one piece,  
The vertuous Matron, and the Miss ;  
The Nymphs of chaste Diana's Train,  
The same with those in Lewkners-lane ;  
But for the difference Marriage makes  
'Twixt Wives, and Ladies of the Lakes.  
Besides, the joys of Place and Birth,  
The Sexes Paradise on Earth ;*

*A pri-*

*A privilege so sacred held,  
That none will to their Mothers yield ;  
But rather than not go before,  
Abandon Heaven at the Door.  
And if th' indulgent Law allows  
A greater freedom to the Spouse ;  
The reason is, because the Wife  
Runs greater hazards of her Life ;  
Is trusted with the Form and Matter  
Of all Mankind by careful Nature.  
Where Man brings nothing but the Stuff,  
She frames the wondrous Fabrick of :  
Who therefore, in a streight, may freely  
Demand the Clergy of her Belly,  
And make it save her, the same way,  
It seldom misses to betray.  
Unless both Parties wisely enter  
Into the Liturgy-Indenture.  
And though some fits of small contest  
Sometimes fall out among the Best,*

*That*



That is no more than every Lover  
Does from his Hackney-Lady suffer,  
That makes no Breach of Faith and Love,  
But rather (sometime) serves t' improve.  
For, as in Running, ev'ry Pace  
Is but between two Legs a Race,  
In which both do their uttermost  
To get before, and win the Post;  
Yet when th' are at their race's ends,  
Th' are still as kind and constant friends,  
And to relieve their weariness,  
By turns give one another ease:  
So all those false Alarms of strife  
Between the Husband and the Wife,  
And little Quarrels, often prove  
To be but new recruits of Love.  
When those wh' are always kind or coy,  
In time must either Tire, or Cloy.  
Nor are their loudest Clamours more,  
Than as th' are relish'd, Sweet, or Sour:

D

Like

*Like Musick, that proves bad, or good,  
According as 'tis understood.  
In all Amours a Lover burns,  
With Frowns, as well as Smiles, by turns  
And Hearts have been as oft with sullen,  
As charming looks, surpriz'd and stollen.  
Then why should more bewitching Clamour  
Some Lovers not as much enamour?  
For Discords make the sweetest Aires,  
And Curses are a kind of Prayers,  
Too slight Alloys for all those grand  
Felicities by Marriage gain'd.  
For nothing else has pow'r to settle  
Th' interests of Love perpetual.  
An Act and Deed that makes one Heart  
Become another's Counter-part,  
And passes Fines on Faith and Love,  
Inroll'd and Registred above,  
To seal the slippery knot of Vows,  
Which nothing else but Death can loose.*

*And*

*And what Security's too strong  
 To guard that gentle Heart from wrong,  
 That to its Friend is glad to pass  
 It self away, and all it has ;  
 And, like an Anchorite, gives over  
 This World, for th' Heaven of a Lover ?*

*I grant ( quoth she ) there are some few  
 Who take that course, and find it true :  
 But Millions, whom the same does sentence  
 To Heaven b' another way, Repentance.  
 Love's Arrows are but shot at Rovers,  
 Though all they hit they turn to Lovers,  
 And all the weighty consequents  
 Depend upon more blind events  
 Than Gamesters, when they play a Set  
 With greatest cunning at Piquet,  
 Put out with caution, but take in  
 They know not what, unsight-unseen.*

*For what doe Lovers, when th' are fast  
In one another's Arms embrac't,  
But strive to plunder, and convey.  
Each other, like a Prize, away?  
To change the property of selves,  
As sucking Children are by Elves?  
And if they use their Persons so,  
What will they to their Fortunes doe?  
Their Fortunes! the perpetual aims  
Of all their Ecstasies and Flames.  
For when the Money's on the Book,  
And All my Worldly Goods—but spoke;  
(The Formal Livery and Seisin  
That puts a Lover in possession)  
To that alone the Bridegroom's wedded,  
The Bride a Flam that's superseded.  
To that their Faith is still made good,  
And all the Oaths to us they vow'd,  
For when we once resign our Pow'rs,  
We have nothing left we can call ours.*

Our Money's now become the Miss,  
Of all your Lives and Services ;  
And we forsaken, and Post-pon'd,  
But Bawds to what before we own'd.  
Which as it made y' at first Gallant us,  
So now hires others to supplant us,  
Until 'tis all turn'd out of doors,  
( As we had been ) for new Amours.  
For what did ever Heiress yet  
By being born to Lordships get ?  
When the more Ladie sh<sup>r</sup> is of Mannors,  
Shes but expos'd to more Trepanners,  
Pays for their Projects and Designs,  
And for her own destruction Fines,  
And does but tempt them with her Riches,  
To use her as the Dev'l does Witches ;  
Who takes it for a special Grace,  
To be their Cully for a space,  
That, when the time's expir'd, the Drazels  
For ever may become his Vassals.

So she, bewitch'd by Rooks and Spirits,  
 Betrays her self, and all sh' inherits  
 Is bought and sold, like stolen Goods,  
 By Pimps, and Match-makers, and Bawds;  
 Until they force her to convey,  
 And steal the Thief himself away.  
 These are the everlasting Fruits  
 Of all your passionate Love-suits,  
 Th' effects of all your amorous Fancies  
 To Portions and Inheritances,  
 Your Love-sick Raptures for Fruition  
 Of Dowry, Jointure, and Tuition;  
 To which you make Address and Courtship;  
 And with your Bodies strive to Worship,  
 That th' Infant's Fortunes may partake  
 Of Love too for the Mother's sake.  
 For these, you play at Purposas,  
 And love your Loves with A's and B's:  
 For these, at Beast and L'hombre wooe,  
 And play for Love and Money too;

Strive



Strive who shall be the ablest Man  
At right Gallanting of a Fan,  
And who the most Gentilely bred  
At sucking of a Vizard Bead,  
How best t' accost us in all Quarters  
To our question-and-command New Garters,  
And solidly discourse upon  
All sorts of Dresses Pro and Con.  
For there's no Mystery nor Trade,  
But in the Art of Love is made.  
And when you have more Debts to pay  
Than Michaelmas and Lady-day,  
And no way possible to do't,  
But Love and Oaths and restless Suit,  
To us y' apply, to pay the Scores  
Of all your cully'd past Amours;  
Aſt o're your Flames and Darts again,  
And charge us with your wounds and pain,  
Which others influences long since  
Have charm'd your Noses with, and Shins;



For which the Surgeon is unpaid,  
 And like to be, without our aid,  
 Lord! what an Amorous thing is Want!  
 How Debts and Mortgages inchant!  
 What Graces must that Lady have,  
 That can from Executions save!  
 What Charms, that can reverse Extent,  
 And null Decree and Exigent!  
 What Magical Attracts and Grates,  
 That can redeem from Scire facias;  
 From Bonds and Statutes can discharge,  
 And from Contempts of Courts enlarge!  
 These are the highest Excellencies  
 Of all our true or false Pretences,  
 And you would damn your selves, and swear  
 As much to an Hostess Dowager,  
 Grown fat and purfy by Retail  
 Of Pots of Beer, and Bottled Ale;  
 And find her fitter for your turn,  
 For Fat is wondrous apt to burn;

Who

Who at your Flames would soon take Fire,  
Relent, and melt to your desire,  
And, like a Candle in the Socket,  
Dissolve her Graces int' your Pocket,

By this time 'twas grown dark and late,  
When th' heard a knocking at the Gate,  
Laid on in haste with such a powder,  
The blows grew louder still and louder,  
Which *Hudibras*, as if th' had been  
Bestow'd as freely on his Skin,  
Expounding by his inward Light,  
Or rather more Prophetick fright,  
To be the Wifard, come to search,  
And take him napping in the lurch,  
Turn'd pale as Ashes, or a Clout;  
But why, or wherefore, is a doubt:  
For Men will tremble, and turn paler,  
With too much, or too little Valour.

His

His Heart laid on, as if it try'd  
To force a passage through his side,  
Impatient (as he vow'd) to wait 'em,  
But in a Fury to fly at 'em;  
And therefore beat, and laid about,  
To find a cranny to creep out.  
But she, who saw in what a taking  
The Knight was by his furious Quaking,  
Undaunted, cry'd, *Courage, Sir Knight,*  
*Know I'm resolv'd to break no Rite*  
*Of Hospitality t' a Stranger,*  
*But to secure you out of danger,*  
*Will here my self stand Sentinel,*  
*To guard this Pass 'gainst Sidrophel.*  
*Women, you know, do seldom fail*  
*To make the stoutest Men turn tail;*  
*And bravely scorn to turn their Backs,*  
*Upon the desperat'st Attacks.*

At this the Knight grew resolute  
As *Iron-side* or *Hardy-knute*;  
His fortitude began to rally,  
And out he cry'd aloud, to rally.  
But she besought him to convey  
His Courage rather out o'th' way,  
And lodge in Ambush on the Floor,  
Or fortifi'd behind a Door,  
That if the Enemy should enter,  
He might relieve her in th' Adventure.

Mean while, they knock'd against the Door,  
As fierce as at the Gate before;  
Which made the Renegado Knight  
Relapse again t' his former fright.  
He thought it desperate to stay  
Till th' Enemy had forc'd his way,  
But rather post himself, to serve  
The Lady, for a fresh Reserve,

His

His Duty was not to dispute,  
But what sh' had order'd execute :  
Which he resolv'd in haste t' obey,  
And therefore stoutly march'd away ;  
And all h' encountred fell upon,  
Though in the dark, and all alone.  
Till Fear, that braver Feats performs  
Than ever Courage dar'd in Arms,  
Had drawn him up before a Pass,  
To stand upon his Guard, and face.  
This he courageously invaded,  
And having enter'd, *Barricado'd* ;  
Inscenc'd himself as formidable  
As could be underneath a Table ;  
Where he lay down in Ambush close,  
T' expect the arrival of his Foes.  
Few minutes had he lain perdue,  
To guard his desperate Avenue,  
Before he heard a dreadful shout,  
As loud as putting to the Rout ;

With

With which impatiently alarm'd,  
He fanſi'd th' Enemy had ſtorm'd,  
And after entring *Sidrophel*  
Was fall'n upon the Guards pell-mell.  
He therefore ſent out all his Senſes,  
To bring him in Intelligences.  
Which Vulgars, out of ignorance,  
Miſtake for falling in a Trance :  
But thoſe that trade in *Geomancy*,  
Affirm to be the ſtrength of Fancy :  
In which the *Lapland-Magi* deal,  
And things incredible reveal.  
Mean while the Foe beat up his Quarters,  
And ſtorm'd the Out-works of his Fortrefs.  
And as another of the ſame  
Degree, and Party, in Arms and Fame,  
That in the ſame Cauſe had ingag'd,  
And War with equal conduct wag'd,  
By vent'ring onely but to thruſt  
His Head a Span beyond his Poſt,



B' a *Gen'ral* of the *Cavaliers*  
Was dragg'd through a Window by th' Ears;  
So he was serv'd in his Redoubt,  
And by the other end pull'd out.

Soon as they had him at their mercy,  
They put him to the Cudgel fiercely,  
As if they scorn'd to trade and barter,  
By giving or by taking Quarter:  
They stoutly on his Quarters laid,  
Until his Scouts came in t' his aid.  
For when a *Man is past his Sense*,  
There's no way to reduce him thence,  
But twindging him by th' Ears or Nose,  
Or laying on of heavy Blows,  
And if that will not doe the Deed,  
To burning with Hot Irons proceed,

No sooner was he come t' himself,  
But on his Neck a sturdy Elf

Clapp'd



Clapp'd in a trice his cloven Hoof,  
 And thus attack'd him with Reproof.  
*Mortal, thou art betray'd to us*  
*B' our Friend, thy evil Genius,*  
*Who for thy horrid Perjuries,*  
*Thy Breach of Faith, and turning Lies,*  
*The Brethrens Privilege ( against*  
*The Wicked ) on themselves, the Saints,*  
*Has here thy wretched Carcass sent*  
*For just Revenge and punishment ;*  
*Which thou hast now no way to lessen,*  
*But by an open, free Confession.*  
*For if we catch thee failing once,*  
*Twill fall the heavier on thy Bones,*  
*What made thee venture to betray,*  
*And filch the Ladie's Heart away ?*  
*To Spirit her to Matrimony----?*  
*That which contracts all Matches, Money.*  
*It was th' enchantment of her Riches,*  
*That made me apply t' your Croney Witches:*

That

That in return would pay th' expence,  
The Wear-and-tear of Conscience ;  
Which I could have patch'd up, and turn'd,  
For th' hundredth part of what I earn'd.  
Didst thou not love her then ? speak true.  
No more. ( quoth he ) than I love you.  
How wouldst th' have us'd her, and her Money ?  
First, turn'd her up to Alimony ;  
And laid her Dowry out in Law,  
To null her Jointure with a Flaw,  
Which I before-hand had agreed  
T' have put, of purpose, in the Deed ;  
And bar her Widow's-making-over  
T' a Friend in Trust, or private Lover.  
What made thee pick and chuse her out,  
T' imploy their Sorceries about ?  
That which makes Gamesters play with those  
Who have least Wit, and most to lose.  
But didst thou scourge thy Vessel thus,  
As thou hast damn'd thy self to us ?

I see you take me for an As :  
 'Tis true, I thought the Trick would pass  
 Upon a Woman well enough,  
 As 't has been often found by Proof;  
 Whose Humours are not to be won  
 But when they are impos'd upon.  
 For Love approves of all they doe  
 That stand for Candidates, and wooe.  
 Why didst thou forge those shameful Lies;  
 Of Bears and Witches in Disguise?  
 That is no more than Authors give  
 The Rabble credit to Believe;  
 A Trick of Following their Leaders,  
 To entertain their Gentle Readers.  
 And we have now no other way  
 Of passing all we doe or say :  
 Which when 'tis natural and true,  
 Will be believ'd b<sup>y</sup> a very few.  
 Beside the danger of offence,  
 The fatal enemy of Sense.

I see

E

Why

Why didst thou chuse that cursed Sin,  
Hypocrisie, to set up in?  
Because it is the thriving'st calling,  
The onely Saints-Bell that rings all in,  
In which all Churches are concern'd,  
And is the easiest to be learn'd.  
For no degrees, unless th' employ't,  
Can ever gain much, or enjoy 't.  
A Gift that is not onely able  
To domineer among the Rabble,  
But by the Law's impow'r'd to rout  
And aw the greatest that stand out.  
Which few hold forth against, for fear  
Their hands should slip, and come too near.  
For no Sin else among the Saints  
Is taught so tenderly against.  
What made thee break thy Plighted Vows?  
That which makes others break a House,  
And hang, and scorn ye all, before  
Endure the Plague of being poor.

Quoth he, I see you have more Tricks  
 Than all our doting Politicks,  
 That are grown old, and out of Fashion,  
 Compar'd with your new Reformation:

That we must come to School to you,  
 To learn your more refin'd, and New.

Quoth he, If you will give me leave  
 To tell you what I now perceive,

You'd find your self an arrant Chouse,  
 If y' were but at a Meeting-House.

'Tis true, Quoth he, we ne'r come there,  
 Because w' have let them out by th' year.

Truely, quoth he, you can't imagine  
 What wondrous things they will engage in:

That as your Fellow-Fiends in Hell  
 Were Angels all before they fell;

So you are like to be agen

Compar'd with th' Angels of us Men.

Quoth he, I am resolv'd to be

Thy Scholar in this Mystery;

*And therefore first desire to know  
Some Principles on which you go.  
What makes a Knave a Child of God,  
And one of us? — A Livelibood.  
What renders Beating out of Brains  
And Murther Godliness? — Great Gains.  
What's tender Conscience? — 'Tis a Botch  
That will not bear the gentlest touch,  
But breaking out, dispatches more  
Then th' Epidemicalst Plague-sore.  
What makes y' encroach upon our Trade,  
And damn all others? — To be paid.  
What's Orthodox and true Believing  
Against a Conscience? — A good Living.  
What makes Rebelling against Kings  
A Good Old Cause? Administstrings.  
What makes all Doctrines plain and clear?  
About Two hundred pounds a year.  
And that which was prov'd true before,  
Prove false again? Two hundred more.*



*What makes the Breaking of all Oaths,  
A holy Duty ? Food and Cloaths.  
What Laws, and Freedom, Persecution ?  
Bring out of Pow'r, and Contribution.  
What makes a Church a Den of Thieves ?  
A Dean and Chapter, and White Sleeves.  
And what would serve, if those were gone  
To make it Orthodox ? Our own,  
What makes Morality a Crime,  
The most notorious of the Time ?  
Morality, which both the Saints  
And Wicked too cry out against ?  
'Cause Grace and Vertue are within  
Prohibited Degrees of Kin :  
And therefore no true Saint allows  
They should be suffer'd to espouse.  
For Saints can need no Conscience  
That with Morality dispense ;  
As Vertue's impious, when 'tis rooted  
In nature onel', and not imputed.*



*But why the Wicked should do so,  
We neither know, nor care to do.  
What's Liberty of Conscience,  
I th' Natural and Genuine Sense?  
'Tis to restore with more security  
Rebellion to its ancient Purity;  
And Christian Liberty reduce  
To th' elder Practice of the Jews.  
For a Large Conscience is all one,  
And signifies the same with None.*

*It is enough (quoth he) for once,  
And has repriev'd thy forfeit Bones,  
Nick Machiavel had ne'r a Trick,  
(Though he gave's Name to our Old Nick)  
But was below the least of these,  
That pass i' th' World for Holiness.*

*This said, the Furies and the Light  
In th' instant vanish'd out of sight;*

And

And left him in the dark alone,  
With stinks of Brimstone, and his own.

The *Queen of Night*, whose large Command  
Rules all the Sea and half the Land,  
And over moist and crazy Brains  
In high Spring-tides at Midnight reigns,  
Was now declining to the West,  
To go to Bed and take her rest.  
When *Hudibras*, whose stubborn Blows  
Deny'd his Bones that soft repose,  
Lay still expecting worse and more,  
Stretch'd out at length upon the Floor;  
And though he shut his Eyes as fast  
As if h' had been to sleep his last,  
Saw all the Shapes that Fear or Wizards  
Do make the Devil wear for Vizards.  
And pricking up his Ears, to hark  
If he could hear too in the dark;

Was first invaded with a Groan,  
 And after, in a feeble Tone,  
 These trembling words. *Unhappy Wretch !*  
*What hast thou gotten by this Fetch ?*  
*Or all thy Tricks in this New Trade,*  
*The Holy Brotherhood o' th' Blade ?*  
*By Santring still on some Adventure,*  
*And growing to thy Horse a Centaur,*  
*To stuff thy Skin with swelling Knobs*  
*Of cruel and hard-wooded Drubs ?*  
*For still th' hast had the worst on't yet,*  
*As well in Conquest as defeat.*  
*Night is the Sabbath of Mankind,*  
*To rest the Body and the Mind :*  
*Which now thou art deni'd to keep,*  
*And cure thy labour'd Corps with Sleep.*  
 The Knight, who heard the words, explain'd  
 As meant to him this Reprimand,  
 Because the Character did hit  
 Point-blank upon his Case so fit ;

Believ'd

Believ'd it was some drolling Sprite  
That staid upon the Guards that Night;  
And one of those h' had seen, and felt  
The Drubs he had so freely dealt.  
When, after a short Pause and Grone,  
The dolefull Spirit thus went on.  
*This 'tis t' ingage with Dogs and Bears  
Pelmell together by the Ears;  
And after painfull Bangs and Knocks,  
To lie in Limbo in the Stocks;  
And from the Pinnacle of Glory,  
Fall headlong into Purgatory :*  
(Thought he, This Devil's full of Malice,  
That on my late Disasters Rallies.)  
*Condemn'd to Whipping, but declin'd it,  
By being more Heroick-minded;  
And at a Riding handled worse,  
With Treats more slovenly and course;  
Ingag'd with Friends in stubborn Wars,  
And hot Disputes with Conjurers;*

And

*And when th' badst bravely won the day,  
Wast fain to steal thy self away.*

( I see, thought he, this shameless Elf  
Would fain steal me too from my self,  
That impudently dares to own  
What I have suffer'd for and done : )

*And now but vent'ring to betray,  
Hast met with Vengeance the same way.*

Thought he, How does the Devil know  
What 'twas that I design'd to do ?

His *Office of Intelligence*,

His *Oracles* are ceas'd long since :

And he knows nothing of the Saints,

But what some treacherous Spy acquaints.

This is some Pettifogging Fiend,

Some Under-Door-keeper's Friend's Friend,

That undertakes to understand,

And juggles at the Second hand ;

And now would pass for *Spirit Po*,

And all mens dark Concerns fore-know.

I think

I think I need not fear him for't :  
These Rallying Devils do no hurt.  
With that he rouz'd his drooping Heart,  
And hastily cry'd out, *What art ?*  
*A Wretch* (quoth he ) *whom want of Grace*  
*Has brought to this unhappy place.*  
*I do believe thee,* quoth the Knight,  
*Thus far I'm sure th' art in the Right;*  
*And know what 'tis that troubles thee,*  
*Better than thou hast ghes'd of me.*  
*Thou art some paltry Black-guard Sprite,*  
*Condemn'd to Drudg'ry in the Night,*  
*That hast no work to do in th' House,*  
*Nor Half-penny to drop in Shoes:*  
*Without the raising of which Sum,*  
*You dare not be so troublesome,*  
*To pinch the Slatterns black and blue,*  
*For leaving you their Work to do.*  
*This is your business, good Pug Robin,*  
*And your Diversion dull Dry Bobbing ;*

T'in-



*T' intice Fanaticks in the Dirt,  
And wash 'em clean in Ditches for 't.  
Of which conceit you are so proud,  
At ev'ry Jest you laugh aloud.  
As now you would have done by me,  
But that I barr'd your Rallery.*

*Sir, (quoth the Voice) y' are no such Sophy  
As you would have the World judge of ye,  
If you design to weigh our Talents  
I th' Standard of your own false Balance,  
Or think it possible to know  
Us Ghosts as well as we do you :  
We, who have been the everlasting  
Companions of your Drubs and Basting,  
And never left you in Contest  
With Male or Female, Man or Beast,  
But prov'd as true t' ye and intire  
In all adventures as your Squire,*

Quoth



Quoth he, *That may be said as true*  
*By th' idlest Pug of all your Crew :*  
*For none could have betray'd us worse*  
*Than those Allies of ours and yours.*  
*But I have sent him for a Token*  
*To your Low-Country Hogen Mogen,*  
*To whose Infernal Shores I hope*  
*He'l swing like Skippers in a Rope.*  
*And if y' have been more just to me*  
*( As I am apt to think ) than he,*  
*I am afraid it is as true,*  
*What th' Ill-affected say of you,*  
*I' have 'spous'd the Covenant and Cause,*  
*By holding up your Cloven Paws.*  
*Sir, quoth the Voice, 'tis true, I grant,*  
*We made and took the Covenant.*  
*But that no more concerns the Cause,*  
*Then other Perjries doe the Laws,*  
*Which when they're prov'd in open Court,*  
*Wear wooden Peccadillo's for't.*

*And*

*And that's the Reason Cow'nanter  
Held up their Hands, like Rogues at Bars.  
I see, quoth Hudibras, from whence  
These Scandals of the Saints commence,  
That are but natural Effects  
Of Satan's Malice, and his Sects,  
Those Spider-Saints, that hang by Threads  
Spun out of th' Entrails of their Heads.  
Sir, quoth the Voice, that may as true  
And properly be said of you;  
Whose Talents may compare with either,  
Or both the other put together.  
For all the Independents do  
Is onely what you forc'd them to.  
You, who are not content alone  
With Tricks to put the Devil down,  
But must have Armies rais'd, to back  
The Gospel-work you undertake:  
As if Artillery, and Edge-tools  
Were th' onely Engines to save Souls.*

*While*

While He, poor Devil, has no pow'r  
By force to run down and devour ;  
Has ne'r a Classis, cannot sentence  
To Stools or Poundage of Repentance ;  
Is ti'd up onely to Design,  
T' Intice, and Tempt, and Undermine :  
In which you all his Arts out-do,  
And prove your selves his Betters too.  
Hence 'tis Possessions do less evil  
Than mere Temptations of the Devil,  
Which all the horrid'st Actions done,  
Are charg'd in Courts of Law upon ;  
Because unless you help the Elf,  
He can do little of himself :  
And therefore where he's best Possess'd,  
Acts most against his Interest ;  
Surprises none but those wh' have Priests  
To turn him out, and Exorcists,  
Supply'd with Spiritual Provision,  
And Magazines of Ammunition,

With

With Croffes, Relicks, Crucifixes,  
 Beads, Pictures, Rosaries, and Pixes;  
 The Tools of working out Salvation  
 By meer Mechanick Operatign,  
 With Holy Water, like a Spout,  
 To overflow all Avenues.  
 But those wh' are utterly unarmed  
 T' oppose his Entrance if he storm'd,  
 He never offers to surprize;  
 Although his falsest Enemies,  
 But is content to be their Drudge,  
 And on their Errands glad to vndge.  
 For where are all your Forfeitures  
 Intrusted in safe hands, but ours?  
 Who are but Jailors of the Holes  
 And Dungeons where you clap up Souls;  
 Like Under-keepers, turn the Keys  
 T' your Mithras Anathemases;  
 And never boggle to restore  
 The Members you deliver o're

Upon

Upon Demand, with fairer Justice  
Than all your Covenanting Trustees :  
Unless, to punish them the worse,  
You put them in the Secular Pow'rs,  
And pass their Souls as some demise  
The same Estate in Mortgage twice,  
When to a Legal Utilegation  
You turn your Excommunication,  
And for a Great unpa'd that's due,  
Distrain on Soul and Body too.

Thought he, 'Tis no mean part of civil  
State-prudence to cajoul the Devil,  
And not to handle him too rough,  
When h' has us in his cloven Hoof.  
'Tis true, quoth he, that intercourse  
Has past between your Friends and ours ;  
That as you trust us in our way,  
To raise your Members, and to lay,

We send you others of our own,  
Denounc'd to Hang themselves or Drown,  
Or, frighted with our Oratory,  
To leap down headlong many a story;  
Have us'd all means to propagate  
Your mighty interests of State,  
Laid out our Spiritual Gifts to further  
Your great designs of Rage and Murther.  
For if the Saints are nam'd from Blood,  
We onel' have made that Title good:  
And if it were but in our power,  
We should not scruple to do more,  
And not be half a Soul behind  
Of all Dissenters of Mankind.  
Right, quoth the Voice, and as I scorn  
To be ungratefull in return  
Of all those kind good Offices,  
I'll free you out of this Distress,  
And set you down in safety, where,  
It is no time to tell you here.



*The Cock crows and the Morn draws on,  
When 'tis decreed I must be gone :  
And if I leave you here till day,  
You'l find it hard to get away.  
With that the Spirit grop'd about,  
To find th' enchanted Hero out,  
And try'd with haste to lift him up ;  
But found his *Forlorn Hope*, his *Craop*,  
Unserviceable with Kicks and Blows  
Receiv'd from hardned-hearted Foes.  
He thought to drag him by the Heels,  
Like *Gresham* Carts, with Legs for Wheels.  
But Fear, that soonest cures those Sores,  
In danger of Relapse to worse,  
Came in t'assist him with its Aid,  
And up his sinking Vessel weigh'd.  
No sooner was he fit to trudge,  
But both made ready to dislodge.  
The Spirit hors'd him like a Sack,  
Upon the *Vehicle*, his Back,*



And bore him headlong into th' Hall,  
With some few Rubs against the Wall.  
Where finding out the Postern lock'd,  
And th' *Avenues* as strongly block'd,  
H' attack'd the Window, storm'd the Glass,  
And in a moment gain'd the Pass, (ers  
Through which he dragg'd the worsted Souldi-  
Fore-quarters out by th' Head and Shoulders;  
And cautiously began to scout,  
To find their Fellow-Cattel out.  
Nor was it half a Minute's Quest,  
E're he retriev'd the Champion's Beast,  
Ty'd to a Pale in stead of Rack,  
But ne'r a Saddle on his Back,  
Nor Pistols at the Saddle-bow,  
Convey'd away the Lord knows how.  
He thought it was no time to stay,  
And let the Night too steal away,  
But in a trice advanc'd the Knight  
Upon the *Bare Ridge* bolt upright.

And

And groping out for *Ralpho's* Jade,  
He found the Saddle too was straid,  
And in the place a Lump of Sope,  
On which he speedily leap'd up ;  
And turning to the Gate the Rein,  
He Kick'd and Cudgell'd on amain.  
While *Hudibras*, with equal haste,  
On both sides laid about as fast,  
And spurr'd as *Jockies* use, to break,  
Or *Padders*, to secure a Neck.  
Where let us leave them for a time,  
And to their *Churches* turn our *Rhyme* ;  
To hold forth their declining State,  
Which now come near an Even Rate.

---

---

THE ARGUMENT  
OF THE  
SECOND CANTO

Of the Third Part.

*The Saints engage in fierce Contests  
About their Carnal Interests;  
To share their Sacrilegious Preys;  
According to their Rates of Grace;  
Their various Frenzies to Reform,  
When Cromwel left them in a Storm;  
Till, in th' Effigie of RUMPS, the Rabble  
Burns all their Grandees of the Cabal.*

---

CANTO II.

---

THE Learned write, *An Insect Breeze*  
Is but a Mungrel Prince of Bees,  
That falls, before a Storm, on Cows,  
And stings the Founders of his House;  
From whose corrupted Flesh that Breed  
Of Vermin did at first proceed.

So,

So, e'r the Storm of War broke out,  
Religion spawn'd a various Rout,  
Of Petulant Capricious Sects,  
The Maggots of Corrupted Texts,  
That first run all Religion down,  
And after every Swarm its own.  
For as the *Persian Magi* once  
Upon their *Mothers* got their *Sons*,  
Who were incapable t' enjoy  
That Empire any other way :  
So *Presbyter* begot the other  
Upon the *Good Old Cause*, his Mother,  
That bore them like the Devil's Dam,  
Whose *Son* and *Husband* are the same.  
And yet no nat'ral Tie of Blood,  
Nor Intr'est for their common good,  
Could, when their Profits interfear'd,  
Get Quater for each others Beard.  
For when they thriv'd, they never fadg'd,  
But onely by the ears engag'd :

Like Dogs that snarl about a Bone,  
 And play together when th' have none.  
 As by their truest Characters,  
 Their constant Actions, plainly appears.

Rebellion now began for lack  
 Of Zeal and Plunder to grow slack ;  
 The Cause and Covenant to lessen,  
 And Providence to b' out of Season :  
 For now there was no more to purchase,  
 O' th' Kings Revenue and the Church's,  
 But all divided, shar'd and gone,  
 That us'd to urge the Brethren on.  
 Which forc'd the Stubborn'st for the Cause  
 To cross the Cudgels to the Laws ;  
 That what by breaking them 't had gain'd,  
 By their Support might be maintain'd :  
 Like Thieves, that in a *Hemp-plot* lie,  
 Secur'd against the *Hue-and-Cry*.

For *Presbyter* and *Independent*  
 Were now turn'd *Plaintiff Defendant*,  
 Laid out their *Apostolick Functions*  
 On *Carnal Orders* and *Injunctions*,  
 And all their *Precious Gifts* and *Graces*  
 On *Out-lawries* and *Scire facias* ;  
 At *Michael's Term* had many a *Trial*,  
 Worse than the *Dragon* and *St. Michael*,  
 Where thousands fell, in shape of *Fees*,  
 Into the *Bottomless Abyss*.

For when like *Brethren* and *Friends*,  
 They came to share their *Dividends*,  
 And ev'ry *Part'ner* to possess  
 His *Church* and *State Joynt-Purchases*,  
 In which the *Ablest Saint* and *Best*  
 Was nam'd in *Trust* by all the rest,  
 To pay their *Money*, and, instead  
 Of ev'ry *Brother*, pass the *Deed* ;  
 He straight converted all his *Gifts*  
 To *pious Frauds* and *holy Shifts*,

And

And settled all the others Shares  
Upon his *outward Man* and's *Heirs* ;  
Held all they claim'd as Forfeit Lands,  
Deliver'd up into his hands,  
And past upon his Conscience,  
By *Pre-intail* of *Providence* ;  
Impeach'd the rest for Reprobates,  
That had no Titles to Estates,  
But by their Spiritual Attaints  
Degraded from the Right of Saints.  
This being reveal'd, they now begun  
With Law and Conscience to fall on ;  
And laid about as hot and Brain-sick  
As th' *Utter Barrister of Swanswick* ;  
Ingag'd with Money-bags, as bold  
As men with Sand-bags did of old ;  
That brought the Lawyers in more Fees,  
Than all unsanctifi'd Trustees :  
Till he who had no more to show  
I th' Case, receiv'd the overthrow ;

Or



Or both sides having had the worst,  
They parted as they met at first.

Poor *Presbyter* was now Reduc'd,  
Secluded, and Cashier'd, and Chews'd,  
Turn'd out and Excommunicate  
From all Affairs of Church and State,  
Reform'd t' a Reformato Saint,  
And glad to turn Itinerant,  
To strowl and teach from Town to Town,  
And those he had taught up Teach down,  
And make those Uses serve agen  
Against the New-inlight'ned men,  
As fit as when at first they were  
Reveal'd against the *Cavalier* ;  
Damn *Anabaptist* and *Fanatick*,  
As pat as *Popish* and *Prelatick* ;  
And with as little variation,  
To serve for any Sect i' th' Nation.

The *Good Old Cause*, which some believe  
 To be the *Dev'l* that tempted *Eve*  
 With Knowledge, and does still invite  
 The World to Mischief with New Light,  
 Had store of Money in her Purse,  
 When he took her for *bett'r or worse* ;  
 But now was grown Deform'd and Poor,  
 And fit to be turn'd out of Door.

The *Independents* ( whose first station  
 Was in the *Rere of Reformation*,  
 A Mungrel kind of *Church-Dragoons*,  
 That serv'd for Horse and Foot at once,  
 And in the Saddle of one Steed  
 The *Saracen* and *Christian* rid,  
 Were Free of ev'ry Spiritual Order,  
 To *Preach*, and *Fight*, and *Pray*, and *Murther* )  
 No sooner got the Start to lurch  
 Both Disciplines, of *War* and *Church*,

And

And Providence enough to run  
The chief Commanders of 'em down,  
But carried on the War against  
The Common Enemy o' th' Saints ;  
And in a while prevail'd so far,  
To win of them the Game of War,  
And be at Liberty once more,  
T' Attack themselves as th' had before.

For now there was no Foe in Arms,  
T' unite their Factions with Alarms,  
But all reduc'd and overcome,  
Except their worst, *themselves at home*,  
Wh' had compast all they Praid, and Swore,  
And Fought, and Preach'd, and Plunder'd for,  
Subdu'd the Nation, Church and State,  
And all things but their *Laws and Hate*,  
But when they came to treat and transact,  
And share the spoils of all th' had ransackt,

To Botch up what th' had torn and rent,  
 Religion and the Government,  
 They met no sooner, but prepar'd  
 To pull down all the War had spar'd;  
 Agreed in nothing but t' *Abolish*,  
*Subvert*, *Extirpate*, and *Demolish*.  
 For Knaves and Fools b'ing near of Kin,  
 As *Dutch-Boors* are t' a *Sooterkin*,  
 Both Parties joyn'd to do their best,  
 To Damn the Publick Interest;  
 And Hearded onely in Consults  
 To put by one anothers Bolts,  
 T' out-cant the *Babylonian* Labourers,  
 At all their Dialects of Jabberers,  
 And tug at both ends of the Saw,  
 To tear down Government and Law.  
 For, as two Cheats, that play one Game,  
 Are both defeated of their Aim:  
 So those who play a *Game of State*,  
 And onely *Cavil* in Debate,

Although

Although there's nothing lost nor won,  
The Publick Business is undone,  
Which still the longer 'tis in doing,  
Becomes the surer way to Ruine.  
This when the *Royalists* perceiv'd,  
( Who to their Faith as firmly cleav'd,  
And own'd the Right they had paid down  
So dearly for, *The Church and Crown,* )  
Th' united constanter, and Sided  
The more, the more their Foes divided.  
For though out-number'd, overthrown,  
And by the Fate of War run down ;  
Their Duty never was defeated,  
Nor from their Oaths and Faith retreated.  
*For Loyalty is still the same,*  
*Whether it win or lose the Game ;*  
*True as a Dial to the Sun,*  
*Although it be not shin'd upon.*  
But when these Bretheren in evil,  
Their *Adversaries* and the Devil,

Began

Began once more to shew them Play,  
And hopes, at least, to have a day,  
They rallied in Parades of Woods,  
And unfrequented Solitudes,  
Conven'd at Midnight in Out-houses,  
T' appoint *New-rising Rendezvous*,  
And with a Pertinacy unmatch'd  
For new Recruits of Danger watch'd:  
No sooner was one Blow diverted,  
But up another Party started.  
And, as if Nature too in haste,  
To furnish out Supplies as fast,  
Before her time had turn'd Destruction  
T' a new and numerous Production;  
No sooner those were overcome,  
But up rose others in their Room,  
That, like the Christian Faith, increas'd  
The more, the more they were Suppress'd:  
Whom neither *Chains* nor *Transportation*,  
*Proscription*, *Sale*, nor *Confiscation*,

Nor

Nor all the desperate events  
Of former try'd Experiments,  
Nor Wounds could terrifie, nor Mangling  
To leave off *Loyalty* and *Dangling*,  
Nor Death ( with all his Bones ) affright  
From vent'ring to maintain the Right,  
From staking Life and Fortune down  
'Gainst all together, for the Crown ;  
But kept the Title of their Cause  
From *Forfeiture*, like Claims in Laws :  
And prov'd no Prosp'rous Usurpation  
Can ever settle on the Nation,  
Until, in spight of Force and Treason,  
They put their Loy'lty in Possession ;  
And by their Constancy and Faith,  
Destroy'd the Mighty men of *Gath*.

Toss'd in a furious *Hurricane*,  
Did *Oliver* give up his *Reign* ;

G

And



And was believ'd, as well by Saints,  
As Moral men and Miscreants,  
To Founder in the *Stygian* Ferry,  
Until he was retriev'd by *Sterry* :  
Who, in a false erroneous Dream,  
Mistook the *New Jerusalem*,  
Prophanely, for th' *Apocryphal*,  
False *Heaven* at the *End o' th' Hall* ;  
Whether it was decreed by Fate,  
His Precious Reliques to Translate.  
So *Romulus* was seen before  
B' as Orthodox a *Senator* ;  
From whose Divine Illumination  
He stole the Pagan Revelation.

Next him his Son and *Heir Apparent*  
Succeeded, though a *Lame Vicegerent* :  
Who first laid by the *Parliament*,  
The onely *Crutch* on which he leant ;

And then Sunk underneath the *State*,  
That rode him above *Horseman's Weight*.

And now the Saints began their *Reign*,  
For which th' had yearn'd so long in vain,  
And felt such Bowel-Hankerings,  
To see an *Empire all of Kings*,  
Deliver'd from th' *Ægyptian Awe*  
Of *Justice, Government, and Law*,  
And free t' erect what *Spiritual Cantons*  
Should be reveal'd, or *Gospel Hans-Towns*,  
To Edifie upon the Ruines  
Of *John of Leyden's old Out-goings*,  
Who for a Weather-cock hung up  
Upon their *Mother-Churche's Top*,  
Was made a Type by Providence  
Of all their Revelations since ;  
And now fulfill'd by his Successors,  
Who equally mistook their Measures :

For when they came to shape the *Model*,  
Not one could fit another's Noddle ;  
But found their Light and Gifts more wide  
From Fadging then th' Unsanctif'd ;  
While ev'ry individual Brother  
Strove hand to fist against another,  
And still the Maddest and most Crackt,  
Were found the Busiest to Transact.  
For though most Hands dispatch apace  
And *make light work*, ( the Proverb says )  
Yet many different Intellects  
Are found t' have contrary Effects ;  
And many Heads t' obstruct Intrigues,  
As slowest Insects have most Legs.

Some were for setting up a King,  
But all the rest for no such thing,  
Unless King *Jesus* : Others tamper'd  
For *Fleetwood*, *Desbrough*, and *Lambert* ;

Some for the *Rump*, and some more crafty,  
For *Agitatours* and the *Safety* ;  
Some for the Gospel, and Massacres  
Of *Spiritual Affidavit-makers*,  
That swore to any Humane Regence  
*Oaths of Supremacy* and *Allegiance*,  
Yea though the Ablest swearing Saint,  
That vouch'd the Bulls o'th' Covenant :  
Others for pulling down the High places  
Of *Synods* and *Provincial Classes*,  
That us'd to make such hostile Inroads  
Upon the Saints, like Bloudy *Nimrods* :  
Some for Fulfilling Prophecies,  
And th' Extirpation of Excise ;  
And some against th' *Ægyptian Bondage*  
Of *Holy days*, and *paying Poundage* :  
Some for the cutting down of *Groves*,  
And rectifying Bakers Loaves ;  
And some for finding out Expedients  
Against the Slav'ry of Obedience.

Some were for *Gospel-Ministers*,  
And some for *Read-Coat Seculars*,  
As men most fit t' hold forth the Word,  
And wield *the one and th' other Sword*.  
Some were for carrying on the Work  
Against the *Pope*, and some the *Turk*;  
Some for engaging to suppress  
The *Camisado of Surplices*,  
The Gifts and Dispensations hinder'd,  
And Turn'd to th' *Outward man the Inward*,  
More proper for the cloudy Night  
Of *Popery*, then *Gospel-Light*.  
Others were for Abolishing  
That Tool of Matrimony, a *Ring*,  
With which th' unsanctifi'd *Bridegroom*  
Is marry'd onely to a *Thumb*;  
(As wise as Ringing of a Pig.  
That uses to break up Ground and Dig;)   
The *Bride* to nothing but her Will,  
That nulls the After-marriage still.

Some

Some were for th' utter Extirpation  
Of *Linsey-Woolsey* in the Nation ;  
And some against all Idolizing  
The *Cross* in *Shop-Books*, or *Baptizing*.  
Others, to make all things recant  
The *Christian* or *Surname* of Saint ;  
And force all *Churches*, *Streets*, and *Towns*,  
The *Holy Title* to renounce.  
Some 'gainst a *Third Estate* of Souls,  
And bringing down the Price of Coals.  
Some for Abolishing Black-pudding,  
And eating nothing with the Blood in ;  
To abrogate them Roots and Branches :  
While others were for eating *Haunches*  
Of *Warriors*, and *now* and *then*  
The *Flesh* of *Kings* and *Mighty Men* ;  
And some for Breaking of their Bones  
With Rods of Ir'n by *Secret ones* ;  
For Thrashing Mountains, and with Spells  
For Hallowing Carriers Packs and Bells.

Things that the *Legend* never heard of,  
But made the Wicked sore afraid of.  
The Quacks of Government ( who fate  
At th' unregarded *Helm of State*,  
And understood, this wild Confusion  
Of fatal Madness and Delusion,  
Must, sooner then a Prodigie,  
Portend Destruction to be nigh )  
Consider'd timely, how t' withdraw  
And save their Wind-pipes from the Law:  
For one Rencontre at the Bar  
Was worse then all th' had scap'd in War:  
And therefore met in Consultation,  
To *Cant* and *Quack* upon the Nation ;  
Not for the sickly Patient's sake,  
Nor what to give, but what to take ;  
To feel the Pulses of their Fees,  
More wise then fumbling Arteries ;  
Prolong the Snuff of Life in Pain,  
And from the Grave recover----*Gain*.

'Mong



'Mong these there was a *Politician*,  
With more Heads then a *Beast in vision*,  
And more Intrigues in ev'ry one  
Then all the *Whores of Babylon*.  
So politick, as if one eye  
Upon the other were a Spy;  
That to trapan the one to think  
The other Blind, both strove to blink:  
And in his dark Pragmatick way  
As busie as a Child at Play.  
H' had seen three Governments Run  
And had a hand in ev'ry one, (down,  
Was for 'em and against 'em all,  
But Barb'rous when they came to fall:  
For by *Trapanning* th' old to Ruine,  
He made his Int'rest with the New one;  
Plaid true and faithful, though against  
His Conscience and was still advanc'd.  
For by the Witch-craft of Rebellion  
Transform'd t' a feeble *State-Camelion*,

By

By giving aim from side to side,  
He never fail'd to save his Tide,  
But got the Start of ev'ry State,  
And at a Change ne'r came too late :  
Could turn his Word, and Oath, and  
As many ways as in a Lath; (Faith,  
By turning, wriggle, like a Screw  
Int' highest Trust, and out for New.  
For when h' had happily incurr'd,  
In stead of Hemp, to be preferr'd,  
And past upon a Government,  
He play'd his trick and out he went :  
But being out, and out of hopes  
To mount his Ladder (more) of Ropes,  
Would strive to raise himself upon  
The Publick Ruine and his own.  
So little did he understand  
The desprate Feats he took in hand.  
For when h' had got himself a Name •  
For Fraud and Tricks ; he spoil'd his Game,

Had

Had forc'd his Neck into a Nooze,  
To shew his play at *Fast and Loose* ;  
And when he chanc'd t' escape, mistook  
For Art and Subtlety, his Luck.  
So right his Judgment was cut fit,  
And made a Tally to his Wit,  
And both together most Profound  
At Deeds of Darkness under Ground :  
As th' Earth is easiest undermin'd  
By Vermin Impotent and Blind.

By all these Arts, and many more  
H' had practis'd long and much before,  
Our *State-Artificer* foresaw  
Which way the World began to draw.  
For as *Old Sinners* have all Points,  
O' th' Compass in their Bones and Joints,  
Can by their Pangs and Aches find  
All Turns and Changes of the Wind,

And

And better then by *Napier's Bones*,  
Feel in their own the Age of Moons ;  
So guilty Sinners in a State  
Can by their Grimes prognosticate,  
And in their Consciences feel Pain  
Some days before a Show'r of Rain,  
He therefore wisely cast about  
All ways he could, t' insure his Throat ;  
And hither came t' observe and smoke  
What Courses other Riskers took ;  
And to the utmost doe his best  
To Save himself, and Hang the rest.

To match this Saint, there was another,  
As busie and perverse a Brother,  
An Haberdasher of Small-wares  
In Politicks and State-Affairs ;  
More Jew then *Rabbi Achitophel*,  
And better gifted to Rebel :

For when h' had taught his Tribe to Spouse  
The Cause, aloft, upon one House,  
He scorn'd to set his own in Order,  
But try'd another, and went further ;  
So sullenly addicted still  
To's onely Principle, *his Will*,  
That whatsoe'r it chanc'd to prove,  
No force of Argument could move,  
Nor *Law*, nor *Cavalcade of Ho'born*,  
Could render half a grain less stubborn,  
For he at any time would hang,  
For th' opportunity t' *harangue*,  
And rather on a Gibbet dangle,  
Then miss his dear delight, to wrangle :  
In which his Parts were so accomplisht,  
That, right or wrong, he ne'r was non-plust ;  
But still his Tongue ran on, the less  
Of weight it bore, with greater ease,  
And with its Everlasting Clack  
Set all mens Ears upon the Rack.

No

No sooner could a hint appear,  
But up he started to Pickere,  
And made the stoutest yield to mercy,  
When he ingag'd in *Controversie* ;  
Not by the froce of Carnal Reason,  
But indefatigable Teazing ;  
With Volleys of eternal Babble,  
And Clamour more unanswerable.  
For though his *Topicks*, frail and weak,  
Could near amount above a Freak :  
He still maintain'd 'em, like his Faults,  
Against the desperat'st Assaults ;  
And back'd their feeble want of Sense  
With greater Heat and Confidence :  
As Bones of *Hectors* when they differ,  
The more th' are *Cudgel'd*, grow the *Stiffer*.  
Yet when his Profit moderated,  
The fury of his Heat abated :  
For nothing but his Interest  
Could lay his Devil of Contest.

It was his *Choice*, or *Chance*, or *Curse*,  
T' espouse the Cause for *Better* or *worse*;  
And with his worldly Goods and Wit,  
And *Soul*, and *Body*, worshipp'd it:  
But when he found the sullen *Trapes*  
Possess'd with th' *Devil*, *Worms*, and *Claps*,  
The *Trojan Mare* in Fole with *Greeks*  
Not half so full of *Jadish Tricks*,  
Though Squeamish in her outward Woman,  
As loose and rampant as *Dol common*;  
He still resolv'd to mend the matter,  
T' adhere and cleave the obstinater;  
And still the skittisher and looser  
Her *Freaks* appear'd, to sit the closer.  
For *Fools* are *stubborn* in their way;  
As *Coins* are *hardned* by th' *Allay*:  
And *Obstinacy* 's ne'r so stiff,  
As when 'tis in a wrong *Belief*.

These



These two, with others, being met,  
And close in Consultation set ;  
After a discontented pause,  
And not without sufficient cause,  
The Oratour we mention'd late,  
Less troubled with the pangs of State,  
Then with his own impatience,  
To give himself first Audience,  
After he had a while look'd wise,  
At last broke silence, and the Ice.

Quoth he, *There's nothing makes me doubt  
Our last Out-goings brought about,  
More then to see the Characters  
Of real Jealousies and Fears,  
Not feign'd, as once, but sadly horrid,  
Scor'd upon ev'ry Member's Fore-head,  
Who, 'cause the Clouds are drawn together,  
And threaten sudden change of Weather,*

Feel

Feel Pangs and Aches of State-turns,  
And Revolutions in their Corns ;  
And, since our Workings-out are crost,  
Throw up the Cause before tis' lost.  
Was it to run away, we meant,  
When, takeing of the Covenant,  
The lamest Cripples of the Brothers  
Took Oaths, to run before all others ;  
But, in their own sense, onely swore  
To strive to run away before ?  
And now would prove, the Words and Oath  
Ingage us to renounce them both ?  
'Tis true, the Cause is in the lurch,  
Between a right and Mungrel Church,  
The Presbyter and Independent,  
That stickle which shall make an end on't:  
And 'twas made out to us the last  
Expedient,——( I mean, Margret's Fast )  
When Providence had been suborn'd,  
What answer was to be return'd.

*Else why should Tumults fright us now,  
We have so many times gone through,  
And understand as well to tame,  
As, when they serve our turns, t' inflame?  
Have prov'd how inconsiderable  
Are all Engagements of the Rabble,  
Whose Frenzies must be reconcil'd  
With Drums and Rattles like a Child;  
But never prov'd so prosperous,  
As when they were led on by us.  
For all our Scouring of Religion  
Began with Tumults and Seditiō;  
When Hurricanes of fierce Commotion  
Became strong Motives to Devotion;  
( As Carnal Sea-men in a Storm  
Turn pious Converts, and reform; )  
When rusty Weapons with chalk'd Edges  
Maintain'd our feeble Priviledges,  
And brown Bills levied in the City  
Made Bills to pass the Grand Committee;*

*When*

When Zeal with aged Clubs and Gleaves  
Gave chase to Rockets and White Sleeves,  
And made the Church and State and Law  
Submit t' old Iron and the Cause,  
And as we thriv'd by Tumults then,  
So might we better now agen,  
If we know how, as then we did,  
To use them rightly in our need.  
Tumults by which the Mutinous  
Betray themselves in stead of us ;  
The Hollow-hearted Disaffected,  
And Close Malignant are detected ;  
Who lay their Lives and Fortunes down,  
For Pledges to secure our own,  
And freely sacrifice their Ears,  
T' appease our Jealousies and Fears.  
And yet for all these Providences  
W' are offer'd, if we had our senses,  
We idly sit, like stupid Block-heads,  
Our hands committed to our Pockets,

*And nothing but our Tongues at large,  
To get the Wretches a discharge.  
Like men condemn'd to Thunderbolts,  
Who, e'r the blow, become meer Dolts;  
Or Fools besotted with their Crimes,  
That know not how to shift betimes,  
And neither have they hearts to stay,  
Nor wit enough to run away.  
Who, if we could resolve on either,  
Might stand, or fall ( at least ) together;  
No mean nor trivial solaces  
To Partners in extream distress,  
Who use to lessen their Despairs,  
By parting them int' equal shares;  
As if the more there were to bear,  
They felt the weight the easier;  
And ev'ry one the gentler hung,  
The more he took his turn among.*

But 'tis not come to that as yet,  
 If we had Courage left or Wit ;  
 Who, when our Fate can be no worse,  
 Are fitted for the bravest course ;  
 Have time to Rally, and prepare  
 Our last and best defence, Despair ;  
 Despair, by which the gallant'st Feats  
 Have been atchiev'd in greatest streights,  
 And horrid'st dangers safely wav'd,  
 By b'ing courageously out-brav'd.  
 As Wounds by wider wounds are heal'd,  
 And Poisons by themselves expell'd.  
 And so they might be now agen,  
 If we were, what we should be, Men ;  
 And not so dully desperate,  
 To side against our selves with Fate :  
 As Criminals condemn'd to suffer,  
 Are blinded first, and then turn'd over.



*This comes of Breaking Covenants,  
And setting up Exauns of Saints,  
That Fine, like Aldermen, for Grace,  
To be excus'd the Efficace,  
For Spiritual men are too Transcendent,  
That mount their Banks for Independent,  
To hang like Mahomet in th' Air,  
Or St. Ignatius at his Prayer,  
By pure Geometry, and hate  
Dependency on Church or State ;  
Disdain the Pedantry o' th' Letter,  
And since Obedience is better  
( The Scripture says ) than Sacrifice,  
Presume the less on't will suffice ;  
And scorn to have the moderat'st stints  
Prescrib'd their peremptory Hints,  
Or any Opinion, true or false,  
Declar'd as such, in Doctrinals,  
But left at large to make their best on,  
Without being call'd t' account or question.*

*Inter-*



*Interpret all the Spleen reveals,  
As Whittington explain'd the Bells ;  
And bid themselves turn back agen  
Lord May'rs of New Jerusalem ;  
But look so big and overgrown,  
They scorn their Edifiers t' own,  
Who taught them all their sprinkling Lessons,  
Their Tones and sanctify'd expressions ;  
Bestow'd their Gifts upon a Saint,  
Like Charity on those that want,  
And learn'd th' Apocryphal Bigots,  
To inspire themselves with Short-hand Notes :  
For which they scorn and hate them worse  
Than Dogs and Cats do Sowgelders.  
For who first bred them up to pray,  
And teach, the House of Commons way ?  
Where had they all their Gifted Phrases,  
But from our Calamies and Cases ?*

*Without whose Sprinkling and Sowing,  
Who e'r had heard of Nye or Owen?  
Their dispensations had been stifled,  
But for our Adoniram Bifield.  
And had They not begun the War,  
Th' had ne'r been Sainted as they are.  
For Saints in Peace degenerate,  
And dwindle down to Reprobate :  
Their Zeal corrupts like standing Water,  
In th' Intervals of War and slaughter;  
Abates the sharpness of its Edge,  
Without the Pow'r of Sacrilege,  
And though th' have Tricks to cast their Sins,  
As easie as Serpents do their Skins,  
That in a while grow out agen,  
In Peace they turn meer Carnal men,  
And from the most Refin'd of Saints,  
As naturally grow Miscreants  
As Barnacles turn Soland-Geesse,  
In th' Islands of the Orcades.*

*Their*

*Their Dispensation's but a Ticket,  
For their conforming to the Wicked ;  
With whom their greatest difference  
Lies more in words and shew, than sense  
For as the Pope, that keeps the Gate  
Of Heaven, wears three Crowns in state ;  
So he that keeps the Gate of Hell,  
Proud Cerberus, wears three Heads as well :  
And, if the World has any troth,  
Some have been Canoniz'd in both,  
But that which does them greatest harm,  
Their Spiritual Gizzards are too warm,  
Which puts the over-heated Sots  
In Fever still, like other Goats.  
For though the Whore bends Hereticks  
With Flames of Fire, like crooked Sticks ;  
Our Schismaticks so vastly differ,  
Th' hotter th' are they grow the stiffer ;  
Still setting off their spiritual goods,  
With fierce and pertinacious fowls.*

*For*

*For Zeal's a dreadful Tarmagant,  
That teaches Saints to tear and rant,  
And Independents, to profess  
The Doctrine of Dependences;  
Turns meek and sneaking Secret ones,  
To Raw-heads fierce and bloody Bones:  
And not content with endless quarrels  
Against the Wicked and their Morals,  
The Gibellins, for want of Guelfs,  
Divert their rage upon themselves.  
For now the War is not between  
The Brethren and the Men of sin;  
But Saint and Saint, to spill the Blood  
Of one another's Brotherhood;  
Where neither side can lay pretence  
To Liberty of Conscience,  
Or zealous suffering for the Cause,  
To gain one Groats-worth of Applause:  
For though endur'd with Resolution,  
'Twill ne'r amount to Persecution.*

*Shall*

*Shall Precious Saints and Secret ones  
Break one another's outward Bones ?  
And eat the Flesh of Brethren,  
In stead of Kings and Mighty men ?  
When Fiends agree among themselves,  
Shall they be found the greater Elves ?  
When Bel's at Union with the Dragon,  
And Baal-Peor Friends with Dagon,  
When Savage Bears agree with Bears,  
Shall Secret ones lug Saints by th' Ears,  
And not atone their fatal wrath,  
When common Danger threatens both ?  
Shall Mastiffs by the Collars pull'd,  
Engag'd with Bulls, let go their hold ?  
And Saints, whose Necks are pawn'd at stake,  
No notice of the Danger take ?  
But though no Pow'r of Heaven or Hell  
Can pacifie Fanatick Zeal ;  
Who would not guess there might be hopes,  
The fear of Gallowses and Ropes*

*Before*

*Before their Eyes might reconcile  
Their Animosities a while ?  
At least, until th' had a clear Stage,  
And equal Freedom to engage,  
Without the danger of Surprise  
By both our common Enemies ?*

*This none but we alone could doubt,  
Who understand their Workings-out,  
And know 'em both in Soul and Conscience,  
Giv'n up & as Reprobate a Non-sense,  
As Spiritual Out-laws whom the Pow'r  
Of Miracle can ne'r restore.  
We, whom at first they set up under,  
In Revelation onely of Plunder,  
Who since have had so many Trials  
Of their encroaching Self-denials,  
That rook'd upon us with design  
To Out-reform and Undermine ;*



Took all our Interests and Commands  
Perfidiously out of our hands ;  
Involv'd us in the Guilt of Blood,  
Without the Motive-gains allow'd,  
And made us serve as Ministerial,  
Like younger Sons of Father Belial.

And yet for all th' inhumane wrong  
Th' had done us and the Cause so long,  
We never fail'd to carry on  
The Work still as we had begun :  
But true and faithfully obey'd,  
And neither preach'd them hurt, nor pray'd ;  
Nor troubled them to crop our Ears,  
Nor hang us like the Cavaliers ;  
Nor put them to the Charge of Gaols,  
To find us Pillories and Carts-tails,  
Or Hang-man's Wages, which the State  
Was forc'd ( before them ) to be at,

That



That cut like Tallies to the Stumps  
Our Ears for keeping true Accompts,  
And burnt our Vessels, like a New-  
Seal'd Peck or Busbel, for b'ing true.  
But hand in hand, like faithfull Brothers,  
Held forth the Cause against all others,  
Disdaining equally to yield  
One Syllable of what we held.  
And though we differ'd now and then  
Bout outward things, and outward Men:  
Our inward Men and constant Frame  
Of Spirit still were near the same.  
And till they first began to Cant,  
And Sprinkle down the Covenant,  
We ne'r had Call in any place,  
Nor dream'd of Teaching down Free-Grace;  
But join'd our Gifts perpetually  
Against the Common Enemy:  
Although 'twas our and their Opinion,  
Each other's Church was but a Rimmon.

And

And yet for all this Gospel-Union,  
And outward shew of Church-Communion,  
They'l ne'r admit us to our shares,  
Of Ruling Church or State Affairs ;  
Nor give us leave t' absolve, or sentence  
T' our own Conditions of Repentance :  
But shar'd our Dividend o' th' Crown  
We had so painfully Preach'd down ;  
And forc'd us, though against the Grain,  
T' have Calls to teach it up again.  
For 'twas but Justice to Restore  
The wrongs we had receiv'd before ;  
And then 'twas held forth in our way,  
W' had been ungrateful not to pay :  
Who for the Right w' have done the Nation,  
Have earn'd our Temporal Salvation,  
And put our Vessels in a way,  
Once more to come again in Play.  
For if the turning of us out,  
Has brought this Providence about,

And

*And that our onely Suffering  
Is able to bring in the King :  
What would our Actions not have done,  
Had we been suffer'd to go on ?  
And therefore may pretend t' a share  
At least in carrying on th' Affair.  
But whether that be so or not,  
W<sup>e</sup> have done enough to have it thought ;  
And that's as good as if w<sup>e</sup> had don't,  
And easier past upon account.  
For if it be but half deny'd,  
'Tis half as good as justify'd.  
The World is nat'rally averse  
To all the truth it sees or hears,  
But swallows Non-sense and a Lie  
With greediness and gluttony ;  
And though it have the Pique, and long,  
'Tis still for something in the wrong :  
As Women long, when th' are with Child  
For things extravagant and wild,*

For

For Meats ridiculous, and fulsom,  
But seldom any thing that's wholsom ;  
And, like the World, Men's Jobbernoles  
Turn round upon their Ears, the Poles ;  
And what th' are confidently told,  
By no sense else can be controll'd.

And this, perhaps, may prove the means,  
Once more, to hedge in Providence.

For, as Relapses make Diseases  
More disprate than their first Accesses ;

If we but get again in Pow'r,  
Our Work is easier than before ;

And we more ready and expert

Ith' Mystery, to do our Part.

We, who did rather undertake

The first War to create, than make :

And when of Nothing 'twas begun,

Rais'd Funds as strange, to carryt on ;

Trepann'd the State, and fac'd it down,  
With Plots and Projects of our own :  
And if we did such Feats at first,  
What can we now w'are better vers'd ?  
Who have a freer Latitude  
Then Sinners give themselves allow'd ?  
And therefore likeliest to bring in  
On fairest Terms, our Discipline.  
To which it was reveal'd long since,  
We were ordain'd by Providence :  
When Three Saints Ears, our Predecessors,  
The Cause's Primitive Confessors,  
B'ing Crucified, the Nation stood  
In just so many Years of Blood :  
That multipl'd by Six, express'd  
The perfect Number of the Beast.  
And prov'd that we must be the Men  
To bring this Work about agen :  
And those who laid the first Foundation,  
Compleat the thorow Reformation :

For who have Gifts to carry on  
 So great a Work, but we alone?  
 What Churches have such able Pastors?  
 And Precious, Powerful, Preaching-Masters?  
 Possess'd with Absolute Dominions,  
 O're Brethren's Purses and Opinions?  
 And trusted with the Double Keys  
 Of Heaven, and their Ware-houses:  
 Who, when the Cause is in Distress,  
 Can furnish out what Sums they please,  
 That Brooding lie in Bankers Hands,  
 To be dispos'd at their Commands:  
 And daily increase and multiply,  
 With Doctrine, Use and Usury.  
 Can fetch in Parties (as in War,  
 All other Heads of Cattel are;)  
 From the Enemy of all Religions,  
 As well as High and Low Conditions;  
 And share them from Blew Ribbands down,  
 To all Blew Aprons in the Town.



From Ladies hurried in Calleches,  
With Cornets at their Footmen's Breeches,  
To Bawds as fat as Mother Nab,  
All Guts and Belly like a Crab.  
Our Party's great, and better t'i'd  
With Oaths, and Trade, than any side :  
Has one considerabl' Improvement,  
To double fortifie the Cov'nant ;  
I mean our Covenants to purchase  
Delinquents Titles and the Churches :  
That pass in Sale, from Hand, to Hand,  
Among our selves, for Current Land.  
And Rise or Fall, like Indian Actions,  
According to the Rate of Factions :  
Our best Reserve for Reformation,  
When New-Out-goings give occasion :  
That keeps the Loins of Brethren girt,  
The Covenant (their Creed) i' assert :  
And when th' have pack'd a Parliament,  
Will once more try th' Expedient,



Who can already muster Friends,  
To serve for Members, to our Ends:  
That represent no part o' th' Nation,  
But Fisher's-Folly Congregation:  
Are only Tools to our Intrigues,  
And sit like Geese to hatch our Eggs:  
Who, by their Precedents of Wit,  
To out-fast, out-leiter, and out-sit:  
Can order matters under hand,  
To put all Bus'ness to a stand:  
Lay Publick Bills aside, for Private,  
And make 'em one another drive out;  
Divert the Great and Necessary,  
With Trifles to contest and vary;  
And make the Nation represent,  
And serve for us in Parliament;  
Cut out more Work than can be done  
On Plato's Year; but finish none,  
Unless it be the Bulls of Lenthal,  
That always pass for Fundamental.

*Can set up Grandee against Grandee,  
To squander time away, and Bandy.  
Make Lords and Commoners lay Sieges  
To one another's Privileges;  
And, rather than compound the Quarrel,  
Engage to th' inevitable peril  
Of both their Ruins; th' only Scope  
And Consolation of our Hope:  
Who, tho we do not play the Game,  
Assist as much by giving Aim.  
Can introduce our ancient Arts,  
For Heads of Factions, i' act their Parts.  
Know what a Leading-Voice is worth;  
A Seconding, a Third, or Fourth:  
How much a Casting Vote comes to,  
That turns up Trump, of I, or No;  
And by Adjusting all at th' End,  
Share ev'ry one his Dividend.  
An Art that so much Study cost  
And now's in danger to be lost;*

*Unless*

Unleß our Ancient Virtuoso's,  
That found it out, get into th' Houses.  
These are the Courses that we took  
To carry things, by Hook, or Crook :  
And partit'd down from Forty Four,  
Untill they turn'd us out of Door ;  
Besides the Herds of Boutefeus,  
We set on work, without the House.  
When ev'ry Knight and Citizen  
Kept Legislative Journey-men,  
To bring them in Intelligence  
From all Points of the Rabbles Sense ;  
And fill the Lobbies of both Houses  
With Politick Important Buzzes :  
Set up Committees of Cabals,  
To pack Designs without the Walls.  
Examine, and draw up all News,  
And fit it to our present Use.  
Agree upon the Plot i' th' Farce,  
And every one his Part rehearse.

Make Q's of Answers, to way-lay  
What th' other Parties like to say,  
What Repartees, and smart Reflexions  
Shall be return'd to all Objections:  
And who shall break the Master-Jest,  
And what, and how, upon the rest:  
Help Pamphlets out, with safe Editions,  
Of Proper Slanders and Seditions:  
And Treason for a Token send,  
By Letter, to a Country Friend.  
Disperse Lampoons, the only Wit,  
That Men, like Burglary, commit:  
Wit, falser than a Padder's Face,  
That all its Owner does, betrays:  
Who therefore dare not trust it, when  
He's in his Calling, to be seen,  
Disperse the Dung on Barren Earth,  
To bring new Weeds of Discord forth.  
Be sure to keep up Congregations,  
In spite of Laws and Proclamations;

For

For Chiarlatans can do no good,  
 Untill th' are mounted in a Crowd:  
 And when th' are punish'd, all the Hurt  
 Is but to fare the better fort;  
 As long as Confessors are sure  
 Of double Pay for all th' endure:  
 And what they earn in Persecution,  
 Are paid i' a Groat in Contribution.  
 Whence some Tub-holders-forth have made  
 In Powdring-Tubs, their richest Trade:  
 And while they keep their Shops in Prison,  
 Have found their Prices strangely risen,  
 Disdain to own the least Regret  
 For all the Christian Blood w' have let;  
 'Twill save our Credit, and maintain  
 Our Title, to do so again;  
 That needs not cost one Dram of Sense,  
 But Pertinacious Impudence:  
 Our Constancy & our Principles,  
 In time, will wear out all things else;

Like

*Like Marble Statues, rub'd to pieces,  
With Gallantry of Pilgrim's Kisses ;  
While those who turn and wind their Oaths  
Have swell'd, and sunk like other Froths.  
Prevail'd a while, but 'twas not long,  
Before from World to World they swung :  
As they had turn'd from side, to side ;  
And as the Changelings liv'd they died.*

*This said ; the impatient States-Monger  
Could now contain himself no longer ;  
Who had not spar'd to shew his Picques,  
' Against th' Haranguers Piliticks ?  
With smart Remarks of Leering Faces,  
And Annotations of Grimaces,  
After k'had ministred a Dose  
Of Snuff-Mundungus, to his Nose ;  
And powder'd th' inside of his Skull,  
Instead of th' outward Jobbermol :*



He shook it, with a scornful Look  
On th' Adversary, and thus he spoke.  
In Dressing a Calves Head, although  
The Tongue and Brains together go,  
Both keep so great a distance here,  
'Tis strange, if ever they come near:  
For, who did ever play his Gambols,  
With such unsufferable Rambles?  
To make the bringing in the King,  
And keeping of him out, one thing is  
Which none can do, but those who swore  
T'as Point-blank Non-sense heretofore:  
That to Defend was to Invade,  
And to Assassinate, to Aid:  
Unless because you drove him out,  
(And that was never made a Doubt)  
No Pow'r is able to restore  
And bring him in, but on your Score.  
A Spiritual Doctrine, that conduces  
Most properly, to all your Uses

'Tis



'Tis true, a Scorpion's Oyl is said  
To cure the Wounds the Vermin made;  
And Weapons drest with Salves, restore  
And heal the Hurts they gave before:  
But whether Presbyterians have  
So much Good Nature as the Salve,  
Or Virtue in them as the Vermin,  
Those who have tri'd 'em can determine.  
Indeed, 'tis pity you should miss  
Th' Arrears of all your Services,  
And for th' Eternal Obligation  
I' have laid upon th' ungrateful Nation:  
But so unconscionable hard,  
As not to find a just Reward,  
For letting Rapine loose, and Murther,  
To rage just so far, but no further:  
And setting all the Land on fire,  
To burn i' a Scanting, but no higher:  
For ventring to assassinate,  
And cut the Throats of Church and State:

And

And not be allow'd the fittest Men  
To take the Charge of both agen.  
Especially, that have the Grace  
Of Self-denying, Gifted Face ;  
Who, when your Projects have miscarri'd,  
Can lay them, with undaunted Fore-head.  
On those you painfully trepann'd,  
And sprinkled in at Second Hand.  
As we have been, to share the Guilt  
Of Christian Blood, devoutly spilt ;  
For so our Ignorance was flam'd,  
To damn our selves, t' avoid being damn'd :  
Till finding your old Foe, the Hang-man,  
Was like to lurch you at Back-Gammon ;  
And win your Necks upon the Set,  
As well as ours, who did but Bet :  
( For he had drawn your Ears before,  
And nick'd 'em on the self-same Score : )  
We threw the Box and Dice away,  
Before y' had lost us at foul Play :

And

And brought you down to Rook, and Lye,  
And Fancy only, on the By.  
Redeem'd your forfeit Jobbernoles,  
From pearching upon lofty Poles :  
And rescued all your Outward Traitors  
From hanging up like Allegators :  
For which ingentiously y' have shew'd  
Your Presbyterian Gratitude :  
Would freely have paid us home in kind,  
And not have been one Rope behind.  
Those were your Motives to divide,  
And scruple, on the other side,  
To turn your Zealous Frands, and Force,  
To Fits of Conscience and Remorse.  
To be convinc'd they were in vain,  
And face about for New again :  
For Truth no more unvail'd your Eyes,  
Than Maggots are convinc'd to Flies :  
And therefore, all your Lights and Call,  
Are but Apocryphal, and False;

To charge us with the Consequences  
Of all your Native Insolences.  
That to your own Imperious Wills,  
Laid Law and Gospel Neck and Heels :  
Corrupted the Old Testament,  
To serve the New for Precedent :  
T' amend its Errors and Defects,  
With Murther and Rebellion-Texts :  
Of which there is not any one  
In all the Book, to sow upon :  
And therefore (from your Tribe ) the Jews  
Held Christian Doctrine forth and Use :  
As Mahomet (your Chief) began  
To mix them in the Alchoran :  
Denounc'd, and pray'd with Fierce Devotion,  
And bended Elbows on the Cushion :  
Stole from the Beggars all your Tones,  
And Gifted Mortifying Groans :  
Had Lights where better Eyes were blind,  
As Pigs are said to see the Wind :

Fill'd

*Fill'd Bedlam with Predestination,  
And Knights-Bridge with Illumination :  
Made Children, with your Tones, to run for't,  
As bad as Bloody Bones or Lunsford.  
While Women, Great with Child, miscarri'd :  
For being to Malignants marry'd :  
Transform'd all Wives to Dalilahs,  
Whose Husbands were not for the Cause :  
And turn'd the Men to Ten-Horn'd Cattel,  
Because they came not out to Battel :  
Made Taylors Prentices turn Heroes,  
For fear of being transform'd to Meroz ;  
And rather forfeit their Indentures,  
Than not espouse the Saints Adventures.*

*Could Transubstantiate, Metamorphose,  
And charm whole Herds of Beasts, like Orpheus,  
Inchant the King's and Churches Lands,  
To obey and follow your Commands :*

*And*

*And settle on a New Free-hold,  
 As Marcly-Hill had done of Old.  
 Could turn the Covenant, and translate  
 The Gospel into Spoons and Plate :  
 Expound upon all Merchants Cashes,  
 And open th' intricateſt Places :  
 Could Catechiſe a Mony Box,  
 And prove all Powches Orthodox ;  
 Until the Cauſe became a Damon,  
 And Pythias, the wicked Mammon.*

*And yet, in ſpight of all your Charms,  
 To conjure Legion up, in Arms ;  
 And raiſe more Devils in the Rout,  
 Than e'er ywere able to caſt out :  
 Have been reduc'd, and by thoſe Fools,  
 Bred up (you ſay) in your own Schools :  
 Who, though but gift'd at your feet,  
 Have made, it plain, they have more Wit.*

And

K

By



By whom you have been so oft trepan'd,  
And held forth out of all Command :  
Out-gifted, Out-impuls'd, Out-done,  
And Out-reveal'd at Carryings on.  
Of all your Dispensations Worm'd,  
Out-providenc'd, and Out-reform'd.  
Ejected out of Church, and State,  
And all things, but the People's Hate :  
And spirited out of th'Enjoyments  
Of precious, edifying Employments ;  
By those who lodg'd their Gifts and Graces,  
Like better Bowlers, in your Places.  
All which you bore, with Resolution,  
Charg'd on th' Account of Persecution :  
And though, most Righteously oppress'd,  
Against your Wills, still acquiest :  
And never Hum'd and Hab'd Sedition,  
Nor snuffled Treason, nor Misprision.  
That is, because you never durst ;  
For had you preach'd and pray'd your worst,



*Alas, you were no longer able  
To raise your Posse of the Rabble :  
One single Red-Coat Sentinel  
Out-charm'd the Magick of the Spell ;  
And with his Squirt-fire, could disperse  
Whole Troops, with Chapter rais'd, and Verse :  
We knew too well those tricks of yours,  
To leave it ever in your Powers :  
Or trust our Safeties, or Undoings,  
To your disposing of Out-goings ;  
Or to your Ordering Providence,  
One Farthings-worth of Consequence*

*For had you Pow'r to undermine,  
Or Wit to carry a Design,  
Or Correspondence to trepan,  
Inveagle, or betray one Man ;  
There's nothing else that intervenes,  
And bars your Zeal to use the means.*

*And therefore wondrous like, no doubt,  
To bring in Kings, or keep them out;  
Brave undertakers to restore,  
That could not keep your selves in pow'r  
T' advance the Interests of the Crown,  
That wanted Wit to keep your own.*

*'Tis true, you have (for I'd be loth  
To wrong ye ) done your Parts, in Both ;  
To keep him out, and bring him in,  
As Grace is introduc'd by Sin ;  
For'twas your zealous want of Sense,  
And sanctifi'd Impertinence :  
Your carrying business in a Huddle,  
That forc'd our Rulers to New-Modle ;  
Oblig'd the State to tack about,  
And turn you, Root and Branch, all out ;  
To Reformado, One and All,  
T' your Great Croysado, General :*

*Your*

Your greedy slav'ring to devour  
Before 'twas in your Clutches, Pow'r.  
That sprung the Game you were to set,  
Before y' had time to draw the Net :  
Your spight to see the Churches Lands  
Divided into other Hands.  
And all your Sacrilegious Ventures,  
Laid out on Tickets and Debentures ;  
Your Envy to be sprinkled down,  
By Under Churches in the Town.  
And no Course us'd to stop their Months,  
Nor th' Independants spreading Growths,  
All which consider'd, 'tis most true,  
None bring him in so much as you.  
Who have prevail'd, beyond their Plots,  
Their Midnight Junto's, and seal'd Knots ;  
That thrive more by your Zealous Piques,  
Than all their own rash Politicks.  
And this way you may claim a share,  
In carrying (as you brag) th' Affair ;

Else Frogs, and Toads, that croak'd the Jews,  
From Pharo, and his Brick-kills-loose :  
And Flies, and Mange, that set them free,  
From Task-Masters, and Slavery :  
Were likelier to do the Feat,  
In any indifferent Man's Conceit ;  
For who e'er heard of Restoration,  
Untill your thorough Reformation :  
That is, the King's and Churches Lands  
Were sequestred int' other Hands ?  
For, only then, and not before,  
Your Eyes were opened to restore.  
And when the Work was carrying on,  
Who crost it, but your selves alone ?  
As, by a World of Hints, appears,  
All plain, and extant, as your Ears.  
But first oth' first ; the Isle of Wight  
Will rise up, if you should deny't ;  
Where Hinderson, and th' other Masses,  
Were sent to cap Texts, and put Cases :

To pass for Deep and Learned Scholars ;  
Although but Paltry, Ob-and-Sollers :  
As if th' unseasonable Fools  
Had been a Cursing in the Schools ;  
Until th' had prov'd the Devil Author  
O' th' Covenant, and the Cause, his Daughter ;  
For, when they charg'd him with the Guilt  
Of all the Blood that had been spilt ;  
They did not mean, he wrought th' Effusion  
In Person, like Sir Pride, or Hughson ;  
But only those, who first begun  
The Quarrel, were by him set on.  
And who could those be but the Saints,  
Those Reformation-Termegants ?  
But e'er this past, the wise Debate  
Spent so much time, it grew too late ;  
For Oliver had gotten Ground,  
T' enclose them, with his Warriors, round :  
Had brought his Providence about,  
And turn'd the untimely Sophists out.

Nor had the Uxbridge bus'ness less  
Of Non-sence in't, and sottishness,  
When from a Scoundrel Holder-forth,  
The Scum, as well as Son o' th' Earth,  
Your mighty Senators took Law  
At his Command, were forc'd t' withdraw;  
And sacrifice the Peace o' th' Nation  
To Doctrine, Use, and Application.  
So when the Scots, your constant Cronies,  
Th' Esponsers of your Cause, and Monies:  
Who had so often, in your Aid,  
So many ways been soundly paid;  
Came in at last, for better Ends,  
To prove themselves your trusty Friends,  
You basely test them, and the Church,  
Th' had train'd you up to, in the Lurch,  
And suffer'd your own Tribe of Christians  
To fall before, as true Philistines.  
This shews what Utensils y' have been,  
To bring the King's Concernments in

Which



Which is so far from being true,  
That none but He can bring in You.  
And if he take you into trust,  
Will find you most exactly just:  
Such as will punctually repay  
With double Interest, and betray.

Not that I think those Pantomimes,  
Who vary Action with the Times;  
Are less ingenious in their Art,  
Than those who dully act one Part;  
Or those who turn from Side to Side;  
More guilty than the Wind and Tide.  
All Countries are, a Wise man's Home,  
And so are Governments to some,  
Who change them for the same Intrigues  
That States-men use in breaking Leagues:  
While others in Old Faiths and Troths,  
Look odd, as in Out-of-fashion'd Cloaths:

And



*And nastier, in an old Opinion,  
Than those who never shift their Linnen.*

*For True and Faithful's sure to loose,  
Which way soever the Game goes:  
And whether Parties lose or win,  
Is always nick'd, or else hedg'd in.  
While Pow'r usurp'd like stol'n delight,  
Is more bewitching than the Right.  
And when the Times begin to alter,  
None rise so high as from the Halter.*

*And so may we, if w' have but Sense  
To use the necessary Means,  
And not your usual Stratagems  
On one another, Lights and Dreames.  
To stand on Terms as positive,  
As if we did not take, but give:  
Set up the Covenant on Crutches,  
Gainst those who have us in their Clutches;*

*And*

And dream of pulling Churches down,  
Before w<sup>e</sup> are sure to prop our own :  
Your constant Method of Proceeding,  
Without the Carnal Means of Heeding :  
Who, 'twixt your Inward Sense, and Outward,  
Are worse, than if y<sup>e</sup> had none, accounted.

I grant, all Courses are in vain,  
Unless we can get in again ;  
The only way that's left us now,  
But all the difficulty's, How ?  
'Tis true ! w<sup>e</sup> have Money, th<sup>e</sup> only Pow'r  
That all Mankind falls down before :  
Money, that, like the Swords of Kings,  
Is the last Reason of all things :  
And therefore, need not doubt our Play  
Has all advantages that way ;  
As long as Men have Faith to sell,  
And meet with those that can pay well.

Whose

Whose half-starv'd Pride and Avarice,  
One Church and State will not suffice,  
T' expose to Sale; beside the Wages  
Of storing Plagues to after Ages,  
Nor is our Money less our own,  
Than 'twas before we laid it down:  
For 'twill return, and turn t' Account,  
If we are brought in Play upon 't;  
Or, but by Casting Knaves, get in,  
What Pow'r can hinder us to win?  
We know the Arts we us'd before,  
In Peace and War; and something more,  
And by the unfortunate Events,  
Can mend our next Experiments.  
For, when w' are taken into Trust,  
How easie are the Wisest chous'd?  
Who see but th' out-sides of our Feats,  
And not their secret Springs and Weights;  
And while th' are busie at their ease,  
Can carry what Designs we please:

How

How easie is't to serve for Agents,  
To prosecute our old Engagements?  
To keep the Good Old Cause on Foot,  
And present Power from taking Root?  
Inflame them both with false Alarms,  
Of Plots, and Parties, taking Arms;  
To keep the Nation's Wounds too wide  
For healing up of Side to Side.  
Profess the passionarist Concerns,  
For both their Interests, by Turns.  
The only way t' improve our own,  
By dealing faithfully with none;  
(As Bowls run true, by being made  
Of purpose false, and to be sway'd)  
For, if we should be true to either,  
'Twould turn us out of both together:  
And therefore have no other Means,  
To stand upon our own Defence;  
But keeping up our Ancient Party  
In Vigor, Confident, and Hearty:

To

To reconcile our late Dissenters,  
 Our Brethren, though by other Venters,  
 Unite them and their different Maggots,  
 As long and short Sticks are in Faggots,  
 And make them joyn again as close,  
 As when they first began *r* Esponse;  
 Ereſt them into Separate  
 New Jewish Tribes, in Church and State;  
 To joyn in Marriage and Commerce,  
 And only among themselves Converſe.  
 And all that are not of their Mind,  
 Make Enemies to all Mankind:  
 Take all Religions in and ſtickle,  
 From Conclave, down to Conventicle;  
 Agreeing ſtill, or disagreeing,  
 According to the Light in Being.  
 Sometimes, for Liberty of Conſcience,  
 And Spiritual miſs-rule, in one Senſe,  
 But in another quite contrary,  
 As Diſpenſations chance to vary:

*And stand for, as the times will bear it,  
All Contradictions of the Spirit :  
Protect their Emessaries, impowrd  
To preach Sedition and the Word :  
And when th' are hamper'd by the Laws,  
Release the Labrers for the Cause ;  
And turn the Persecution back,  
On those that made the first Attack.*

*To keep them equally in awe,  
From breaking or maintaining Law ;  
And when they have their Fits to soon,  
Before the Full-Tides of the Moon :  
Put off their Zeal t'a fitter Season,  
For sowing Faction in, and Treason ;  
And keep them hooded, and their Churches,  
Like Hawks from bating on their Perches.  
That when the Blessed Time shall come,  
Of quitting Babylon and Rome,*

*They*



*They may be ready to restore  
Their own Fifth-Monarchy, once more;  
Mean while, be better Arm'd to Fence,  
Against Revolts of Providence;  
By watching narrowly, and snapping  
All blind sides of it, as they happen:  
For, if Success could make us Saints,  
Our Ruin turn'd us Miscreants:  
A Scandal that would fall too hard  
Upon a Few, and unprepar'd.*

*These are the Courses we must run,  
Spight of our Hearts, or be undone:  
And not to stand on Terms and Freaks,  
Before we have secur'd our Necks.  
But do our Work, as out of sight,  
As Stars by Day, and Suns by Night:  
All Licence of the People own,  
In opposition to the Crown.*

*And*



And for the Crown as fiercely side,  
The Head and Body to divide ;  
The end of all we first design'd,  
And all that yet remains behind :  
Be sure to spare no publick Rapine,  
On all Emergencies that happen ;  
For 'tis as easie to supplant  
Authority, as Men in want :  
As some of us, in trusts, have made  
The one hand with the other trade ;  
Gain'd vastly, by their Joynt-endeavour ;  
The right a Thief, the left Receiver.  
And what the one, by tricks, forestall'd,  
The other, by as sly, Retail'd.  
For Gain has wonderful Effects,  
To improve the Façtory of Sects ;  
The Rule of Faith in all Professions,  
And great Diana of the Ephesians ;  
Whence turning of Religion's made  
The means to turn and wind a Trade.

They may be ready to restore  
Their own Fifth-Monarchy, once more;  
Mean while, be better Arm'd to Fence,  
Against Revolts of Providence;  
By watching narrowly, and snapping  
All blind sides of it, as they happen:  
For, if Success could make us Saints,  
Our Ruin turn'd us Miscreants:  
A Scandal that would fall too hard  
Upon a Few, and unprepar'd.

These are the Courses we must run,  
Spight of our Hearts, or be undone:  
And not to stand on Terms and Freaks,  
Before we have secur'd our Necks.  
But do our Work, as out of sight,  
As Stars by Day, and Suns by Night:  
All Licence of the People own,  
In opposition to the Crown.

And

And for the Crown as fiercely side,  
The Head and Body to divide ;  
The end of all we first design'd,  
And all that yet remains behind :  
Be sure to spare no publick Rapine,  
On all Emergencies that happen ;  
For 'tis as easie to supplant  
Authority, as Men in want :  
As some of us, in trusts, have made  
The one hand with the other trade ;  
Gain'd vastly, by their Joynt-endeavour ;  
The right a Thief, the left Receiver.  
And what the one, by tricks, forestall'd,  
The other, by as sly, Retail'd.  
For Gain has wonderful Effects,  
To improve the Façtory of Sects ;  
The Rule of Faith in all Professions,  
And great Diana of the Ephesians ;  
Whence turning of Religion's made  
The means to turn and wind a Trade.

*And though some change it for the worse,  
They put themselves into a Course ;  
And draw in store of Customers,  
To thrive the better in Commerce :  
For, all Religions flock together,  
Like Tame, and Wild-Fowl of a Feather ;  
To nab the Itches of their Sects ;  
As Jades do one another's Necks.  
Hence 'tis, Hypocrisie, as well,  
Will serve t' improve a Church, as Zeal ;  
As Persecution, or Promotion,  
Do equally advance Devotion.*

*Let Business, like ill Watches, go,  
Sometime too fast, sometime to slow :  
For, things in order are put out  
So easie, Ease it self will do't.  
But when the Feat's design'd and meant,  
What Miracle can bar th' event ?*

For 'tis more easie to betray,  
Than ruin any other way.

All possible Occasions start,  
The Weighty'st Matters to divert:

Obstruct, Perplex, Distract, Intangle,  
And lay perpetual Trains to wrangle:

But in Affairs of less Import,  
That neither do us Good nor Hurt,

And they receive as little by,  
Out-fawn as much, and Out-comply:

And seem as scrupulously just,  
To bait our Hooks for greater Trust.

But still be careful to cry down  
All publick Actions, though our own:

The least Miscarriage aggravate,  
And charge it all upon the State:

Express the horrid'st Detestation,  
And pity the distracted Nation.

*Tell Stories, scandalous and false,  
I th' proper Language of Cabals :  
Where all a subtil States-man says  
Is half in Words, and half in Face :  
( As Spaniards talk in Dialogues,  
Of Heads and Shoulders, Nods and Shrugs )  
Entrust it under solemn Vows  
Of Mum and Silence, and the Rose,  
To be retail'd again in Whispers,  
For th' easie credulous to disperse.*

Thus far the States-man. When a Shout,  
Heard at a distance, put him out.  
And strait another, all agast,  
Rush'd in with equal Fear and Haste :  
Who star'd about, as pale as Death,  
And for a while, *as out of Breath ;*  
Till having gather'd up his Wits ;  
He thus began his Tale by Fits.



That beastly Rabble,—that came down,  
From all the Garrets—in the Town,  
And Stalls, and Shop-boards—in vast Swarms,  
With new-chalk'd Bills,—and rusty Arms,  
To cry the Cause—up, heretofore,  
And bawl the Bishops—out of Door ;  
Are now drawn up,—in greater Shoals,  
To Roast—and Broil us on the Coals :  
And all the Grandees—of our Members  
Are Carbonading on—the Embers ;  
Knights, Citizens and Burgessees —  
Held forth by Rumps—of Pigs and Geese.  
That serve for Characters—and Badges,  
To represent their Personages,  
Each Bone-fire is a Funeral Pile,  
In which they Roast, and Scorch, and Broil ;  
And ev'ry Representative  
Have vow'd to Roast—and Broil alive ;



And 'tis a Miracle, we are not  
Already, sacrific'd Incarnate.  
For, while we wrangle here, and jar,  
We are Grylly'd all at Temple-Bar :  
Some, on the Sign-post of an Ale-house,  
Hang in Effigy, on the Gallows,  
Made up of Rags, to personate  
Respective Officers of State ;  
That henceforth they may stand reputed,  
Proscrib'd in Law, and Executed,  
And while the Work is carrying on,  
Be ready List'd under Dun ;  
That Worthy Patriot, once the Bellows,  
And Tinder-box of all his Fellows.  
The activ'st Member of the Five,  
As well as the most Primitive :  
Who, for his faithful Service then,  
Is chosen for a Fifth agen ;  
( For, since the State has made a Quint  
Of Generals, he's list'd in't. )

This

*This Worthy, as the World will say,  
Is paid in Specie, his own way ;  
For, moulded to the Life in Clouts,  
Th' have pick'd from Dung-hills hereabouts :  
He's mounted on a Hazel Bavin,  
A crop'd Malignant Baker gave 'em :  
And, to the largest Bonfire riding,  
Th' have roasted Cook already, and Pride-m.  
On whom, in Equipage, and State,  
His Scare-crow Fellow-Members wait ;  
And March in Order, two and two,  
As at Thanksgivings th' us'd to do :  
Each in a tatter'd Talismane,  
Like Vermine in Effigie slain.*

*But (what's more dreadful than the rest)  
Those Rumps are but the Tail o' th' Beast ;  
Set up by Popish Engineers,  
As by the Crackers plainly appears :*

*For, none but Jesuits have a Mission  
To preach the Faith with Ammunition ;  
And propagate the Church with Powder,  
Their Founder was a blown up Soldier.  
These Spiritual Pioneers o' th' Whores,  
That have the Charge of all her Stores ;  
Since first they fail'd in their Designs,  
To take in Heav'n by springing Mines ;  
And with unanswerable Barrels  
Of Gun-powder, dispute their Quarrels :  
Now take a Course more practicable,  
By laying Trains to fire the Rabble,  
And blow us up in th' open Streets ;  
Disguis'd in Rumps, like Sambenites ;  
More like to Ruin, and Confound,  
Than all their Doctrines under-ground.*

*Nor have they chosen Rumps amiss,  
For Symbols of State-Mysteries ;*

*Though*

Though some suppose, 'twas but to shew  
 How much they scorn'd the Saints, The Few ;  
 Who, 'cause th' are wasted to the stumps,  
 Are represented best by Rumps,  
 But Jesuits have deeper Reaches  
 In all their Politick Far-fetches :  
 And from their Coptick Priest, Kirkerus,  
 Found out this Mystick way to jeer us.

For, as the Ægyptians us'd, by Bees,  
 T' express their Antick Ptolomies ;  
 And by their Stings, the Swords they wore,  
 Held forth Authority and Pow'r :  
 Because these subtil Animals  
 Bear all their Int'rests in their Tails ;  
 And when th' are once impair'd in that,  
 Are banish'd their Well-order'd State :  
 They thought all Governments were best,  
 By Hieroglyphick Rumps, exprest,

For

*For, none but Jesuits have a Mission  
To preach the Faith with Ammunition ;  
And propagate the Church with Powder,  
Their Founder was a blown up Soldier.  
These Spiritual Pioneers o' th' Whores,  
That have the Charge of all her Stores ;  
Since first they fail'd in their Designs,  
To take in Heav'n by springing Mines ;  
And with unanswerable Barrels  
Of Gun-powder, dispute their Quarrels :  
Now take a Course more practicable,  
By laying Trains to fire the Rabble,  
And blow us up in th' open Streets ;  
Disguis'd in Rumps, like Sambenites ;  
More like to Ruin, and Confound,  
Than all their Doctrines under-ground.*

*Nor have they chosen Rumps amiss,  
For Symbols of State-Mysteries ;*

*Though*

Though some suppose, 'twas but to shew  
 How much they scorn'd the Saints, The Few ;  
 Who, 'cause th' are wasted to the stumps,  
 Are represented best by Rumps,  
 But Jesuits have deeper Reaches  
 In all their Politick Far-fetches :  
 And from their Coptick Priest, Kirkerus,  
 Found out this Mystick way to jeer us.

For, as the Ægyptians us'd, by Bees,  
 T' express their Antick Ptolomies ;  
 And by their Stings, the Swords they wore,  
 Held forth Authority and Pow'r :  
 Because these subtil Animals  
 Bear all their Int'rests in their Tails ;  
 And when th' are once impair'd in that,  
 Are banish'd their Well-order'd State :  
 They thought all Governments were best,  
 By Hieroglyphick Rumps, express,

For

*For, as in Bodies Natural,  
The Rump's the Fundament of all ;  
So, in a Commonwealth, or Realm,  
The Government is call'd the Helm :  
With which, like Vessels under Sail,  
Th' are turn'd and winded by the Tail.  
The Tail, which Birds and Fishes steer  
Their Courses with, through Sea and Air;  
To whom the Rudder of the Rump is  
The same thing with the Stern and Compass.  
This shews how perfectly the Rump  
And Commonwealth in Nature jump.  
For, as a Fly, that goes to Bed,  
Rests with his Tail above his Head ;  
So in this Mungrel State of ours,  
The Rabble are the Supreme Powers.  
That Hors'd us on their Backs, to show us  
A Jadish trick at last, and throw us.*



The Learned Rabbins of the Jews  
Write, there's a Bone which they call Luez,  
Itb' Rump of Man, of such a Vertue,  
No force in Nature can do hurt to;  
And therefore, at the last Great Day,  
All th' other Members shall, they say,  
Spring out of this, as from a Seed,  
All sorts of Vegetals proceed  
From whence, the Learned Sons of Art,  
Os Sacrum, justly stile that Part.

Then what can better represent,  
Than this Rump-bone, the Parliament?  
That after severat rude Ejections,  
And as prodigious Resurrections;  
With new Reversions of nine Lives,  
Starts up, and like a Cat, revivies?

But

But now, alas, th' are all expir'd,  
 And th' House, as well as Members fir'd;  
 Consum'd in Kennels; by the Rout,  
 With which they other Fires put out:  
 Condemn'd t' ungoverning Distress,  
 And Paultry, Private Wretchedness:  
 Worse than the Devil to Privation,  
 Beyond all hopes of Restauration;  
 And parted like the Body and Soul,  
 From all Dominion and Controll.

We, who could lately, with a Look,  
 Enact, Establish, or Revoke;  
 Whose Arbitrary Nods gave Law,  
 And Frowns kept multitudes in Awe;  
 Before the Bluster of whose Huff,  
 All Hats, as in a Storm, flew off.  
 Ador'd and bow'd to, by the Great,  
 Down to the Foot-man, and Valet.

Had

Had more bent Knees than Chappel-Mats,  
And Prayers, than the Crowns of Hats ;  
Shall now be scorn'd as wretchedly,  
For Ruin's just as low as high ;  
Which might be suffer'd, were it all  
The Horrour, that attends our Fall :  
For, some of us have Scores more large  
Than Heads and Quarters can discharge.  
And others who, by restless scraping  
With Publick Frauds, and private Rapine ;  
Have mighty Heaps of Wealth amass'd,  
Would gladly lay down all at last :  
And to be but undone, Entail  
Their Vessels on perpetual Jail ;  
And bless the Devil to let them Farms  
Of forfeit Souls, on no worse terms.

This said, A near and louder Shout  
Put all th' Assembly to the Rout :

Who

Who now begun t' out-run their fear,  
 As Horses do, from those that bear;  
 But crowd'd on, with so much haste,  
 Untill th' had block'd the Passage fast;  
 And Barricadoed it with Haunches  
 Of Outward Men, and Bulks, and Paunches;  
 That with their shoulders strove to squeeze,  
 And rather save a Crippl'd piece  
 Of all their crush'd and broken Members,  
 Than have them Grill'd on the Embers:  
 Still pressing on with heavy Packs,  
 Of one another, on their Backs:  
 The Van-Guard could no longer bear  
 The Charges of the Forlorn Rere;  
 But born down head-long by the Rout,  
 Were trampled sorely under Foot.  
 Yet nothing prov'd so formidable,  
 As the horrid Cookery of the Rabble;  
 And Fear that keeps all Feeling out,  
 As lesser Pains are, by the Gout,

Reliev'd 'em with a fresh Supply  
 Of rallied Force, enough to fly ;  
 And beat a Tuscan Running Horse,  
 Whose Jocky-Rider is all Spurs.

## CANTO III.

## The ARGUMENT.

The Knight and Squire's Prodigious Flight:  
 To quit th' Incharmed Bow'r by Night :  
 He plods to turn his Amorous Suit  
 T' a Plea in Law, and prosecute :  
 Repairs to Counsel, to advise  
 'Bout managing the Enterprize :  
 But first resolves to try by Letter,  
 And once more, fair Address, to get her.

Who would believe what strange Bugbears  
 Mankind creates it self, of Fears ?  
 That spring like Fern, that Insect Weed,  
 Equivocally, without Seed ;

And

And have no possible Foundation,  
But merely in th' Imagination :  
And yet can do more dreadful Feats,  
*Than Hags*, with all their *Imps and Teats* :  
Make more bewitch and haunt themselves,  
Than all their *Nurseries of Elves*.  
For fear does things so like a Witch,  
'Tis hard t' unriddle which is which.  
Sets up Communities of Senses,  
To chop and change Intelligences :  
As *Rosicrucian Virtuoso's*,  
Can see with *Ears*, and hear with *Noses* :  
And when they neither see nor hear,  
Have more than both supplied by Fear ;  
That makes 'em in the dark see *Visions*,  
And hag themselves with *Apparitions*.  
And when their Eyes discover least,  
Discern the subtlest Objects best.  
Do things not contrary alone  
To th' Course of Nature, but its own.

The

The Courage of the Bravest daunt,  
And turn Pultroons as valiant ;  
*For Men as resolute appear*  
*With too much, as too little Fear.*  
And when th' are out of hopes of flying,  
Will run away from Death by dying :  
Or turn again to stand it out,  
And those that fled, like Lions Rout.  
This *Hudibras* had prov'd too true,  
Who, by the Furies, left *Perdue* :  
And haunted with Detachments, sent  
From *Marshal-Legion's Regiment* ;  
Was by a *Fiend*, as counterfeit,  
Reliev'd and Rescu'd with a Cheat :  
When nothing but himself and fear  
Was both the *Imps and Conjuror* :  
As by the Rules o'th *Virtuosi*,  
It follows in due *Form of Poste*.

M

Disguis'd



Disguis'd in all the Masks of Night,  
We left our Champion on his flight :  
At *Blind-man's-buff*, to grope his way,  
In equal fear, of *Night and Day* :  
Who took his dark and desp'rate Course,  
He knew no better than his Horse ;  
And by an unknown Devil led,  
( He knew as little whether ) fled,  
He never was in greater need,  
Nor less Capacity of Speed :  
Disabled both in Man and Beast,  
To fly, and run away, *his best* ;  
To keep the Enemy, and Fear,  
From equal falling on his Rere.  
And tho with Kicks and bangs he ply'd  
The further, and the nearer side :  
( As *Sea-men* ride with all their force,  
And *Tug* as if they Row'd the Horse ;

And

And when the Hackney Sails most swift,  
 Believe they *lag*, or *run a-drift* )  
 So though he posted e'er so fast,  
 His Fear was greater than his *Haste* :  
 For Fear, though fleetier than the Wind,  
 Believes 'tis always left behind.  
 But when the Morn began to appear,  
 And shift t' *another Scene* his Fear ;  
 He found his new *Officious Shade*,  
 That came so timely to his Aid ;  
 And forc'd him from the Foe t' escape,  
 Had turn'd it self to *Ralpho's shape*.  
 So like in *Person, Garb, and Pitch*,  
 'Twas hard t' interpret *which was which*.

For *Ralpho* had no sooner told  
 The Lady all he had t' unfold,  
 But she convey'd him out of sight.  
 To entertain the approaching Knight.

And while he gave himself Diversion,  
 T' accommodate his *Beast and Person*;  
 And put his *Beard* into a posture,  
 At best advantage to accost her;  
 She order'd th' *Antimasquerade*,  
 (For his Reception) *asore said*:  
 But when the *Ceremony* was done,  
 The *Lights* put out, and *Furies* gone;  
 And *Hudibras*, amongst the rest,  
 Convey'd away, as *Ralpho* guest:  
 The wretched *Caitiff* all alone,  
 (As he believ'd) began to moan,  
 And tell his *Story* to himself;  
 The Knight mistook him for an *Elf*,  
 And did so still, till he began  
 To scruple at *Ralph's* Outward Man;  
 And thought, because they oft agreed,  
 T' appear in one another's stead;  
 And act the *Saints* and *Devils* Part,  
 With undistinguishable Art;

bna

s M

They

They might have done so now perhaps,  
 And put on one another's Shapes ;  
 And therefore, to resolve the doubt,  
 He star'd upon him, and cry'd out.  
*What art ? My Squire, or that bold Sprite,  
 That took his Place and Shape to Night ?  
 Some busie Independent Pug,  
 Retainer to his Synagogue ?*  
 Alas, quoth he, I'm none of these  
 Your Bosom-Friends, as you suppose ;  
 But Ralph himself, your trusty Squire,  
 Wh' has drag'd your Dunship out o' th' mire  
 And from the Inchantments of a Widdow,  
 Wh' had turn'd you int' a Beast, have freed you.  
 And though a Prisoner of War,  
 Have brought you safe, where now you are,  
 Which you would gratefully repay,  
 Your constant Presbyterian way.  
 That's stranger (quoth the Knight) and stranger:  
 Who gave thee notice of my danger ?

Quoth he, *Th' Infernal Conjurer*  
*Pursu'd, and took me Prisoner ;*  
*And knowing you were hereabout,*  
*Brought me along, to find you out.*  
*Where I, in Hugger-mugger hid,*  
*Have noted all they said and did :*  
*And though they lay to him the Pageant,*  
*I did not see him, nor his Agent ;*  
*Who plaid their Sorceries out of sight,*  
*T' avoid a fiercer, second Fight.*

But, didst thou see no Devils then ?  
Not one, quoth he, *but Carnal Men.*  
*A little worse than Fiends in Hell,*  
*And that She-Devil, Jezabel ;*  
*That laugh'd and tee-he'd with derision,*  
*To see them take your Deposition.*  
What then (quoth *Hudibras*) was he  
That plaid the Dev'l, to examine me ?

*A Rallying Weaver in the Town,  
 That did it in a Parson's Gown :  
 Whom all the Parish takes for gifted ;  
 But, for my part, I ne'er believ'd it.  
 In which you told them all your Feats,  
 Your Conscientious Frauds and Cheats ;  
 Deny'd your Whipping, and confess'd  
 The naked Truth of all the rest :  
 More plainly than the Reverend Writer,  
 That to our Churches veil'd his Mitre.  
 All which they took in Black and White,  
 And cudgel'd me to under-write.  
 What made thee, when they all were gone,  
 And none but thou and I alone ;  
 To act the Devil, and forbear  
 To rid me of my Hellish Fear ?  
 Quoth he, I knew your constant Rate,  
 And Frame of Sp'rite, too obstinate,  
 To be by me prevail'd upon  
 With any Motives of my own :*

*And therefore strove to counterfeit  
 The Dev'l a while, to Nick your Wit.  
 The Devil, that is your constant Crony,  
 That only can prevail upon ye ;  
 Else we might still have been disputing,  
 And they with mighty Drubs confuting.*

*The Knight, who now began to find  
 Th' had left the Enemy behind ;  
 And saw no farther harm remain,  
 But feeble Weariness and Pain ,  
 Perceiv'd, by losing of their Way,  
 Th' had gain'd th' advantage of the Day ;  
 And by declining of the Road,  
 They had by chance their Rere made good.  
 He ventur'd to dismiss his Fear,  
 That parting's wont to Rant and Tear.  
 And gives the desperat'st Attack  
 To danger, still behind its Back.*



For, having paws'd to recollect,  
 And on his past Success reflect,  
 T' examine and consider why,  
 And whence, and how, he came to fly ;  
 And when no Devil had appear'd,  
 What else, it could be said, he fear'd ?  
 It put him in so fierce a Rage ;  
 He once resolv'd to re-engage ;  
 Toft like a Foot-ball back again,  
 With Shame, and Vengeance, and Disdain.

Quoth he, *It was thy Cowardise*  
*That made me from this Leaguer rise ;*  
*And when I had half reduc'd the place,*  
*To quit it infamously base.*  
*Was better cover'd by thy New*  
*Arriv'd Detachment than I knew :*  
*To slight my new Acquest, and run*  
*Victoriously, from Battels won.*

And

*And reck'ning all I gain'd or lost,  
 To sell them cheaper than they cost,  
 To make me put my self to flight ;  
 And Conqu'ring, run away by night.  
 To drag me out, which th' haughty Foe,  
 Durst never have presum'd to do.  
 To mount me in the dark by force,  
 Upon the bare Ridge of my Horse.  
 Expos'd in Quерpo to their Rage,  
 Without my Arms and Equipage ;  
 Lest, if they ventur'd to pursue,  
 I might the unequal Fight renew.  
 And, to preserve thy Outward Man,  
 Assum'd my Place, and led the Van.*

*All this, quoth Ralph, I did, 'tis true,  
 Not to preserve my self, but you.  
 You, who were damn'd to baser Drubs,  
 Than Wretches feel in Powdering Tubbs ;*

To mount two wheel'd Carroches, worse  
 Than manning a Wooden Horse:  
 Drag'd out through straiter Holes, by th' Ears,  
 Eras'd, or Coup'd for Perjurers.  
 Who, though the Attempt had prov'd in vain,  
 Had had no reason to complain:  
 But since it prosper'd, 'tis unhandſome  
 To blame the Hand that paid your Ransome:  
 And rescu'd your obnoxious Bones  
 From unavoidable Battoons.  
 The Enemy was reinforc'd,  
 And we disabled and unhors'd:  
 Disarm'd, unqualifi'd for Fight;  
 And no way left, but hasty Flight.  
 Which, though as desperate in the Attempt,  
 Has giv'n you freedom to condemn't.

But were our Bones in fit Condition  
 To re-inforce the Expedition,

'Tis

'Tis now unseasonable, and vain,  
To think of falling on again :  
No Martial Project to surprize,  
Can ever be attempted twice ;  
Nor cast design serve afterwards,  
As Gamesters tear their losing Cards.  
Beside, our bangs of man and Beast  
Are fit for nothing now but Rest.  
And for a while will not be able  
To rally, and prove serviceable.  
And therefore I with reason chose  
This Stratagem, t' amuse our Foes.  
To make an Honourable Retreat,  
And wave a total sure Defeat :  
For, those that fly, may fight again,  
Which he can never do that's slain.  
Hence timely Running's no mean part  
Of Conduct, in the Martial Art,  
By which some Glorious Feats atchieve  
As Citizens, by breaking, thrive.

And

And Cannons conquer Armies, while  
 They seem to draw off and recoil.  
 Is held the gallantest Course, and bravest,  
 To great Exploits, as well as safest :  
 That spares the Expence of Time and Pains,  
 And dangerous beating out of Brains.  
 And in the end prevails, as certain,  
 As those that never trust to Fortune ;  
 But make their Fear do Execution,  
 Beyond the stoutest Resolution ;  
 As Earth-quakes kill, without a Blow,  
 And only trembling, overthrow.  
 If th' Ancients Crown'd their bravest men  
 That only sav'd a Citizen,  
 What Victory could e'er be won,  
 If ev'ry one would save but one ?  
 Or Fight endanger'd to be lost,  
 Where all resolve to save the most ?  
 By this means, when a Battel's won,  
 The War's as far from being done :

For

For those that save themselves, and fly,  
 Go halves, at least, in th' Victory :  
 And sometime, when their loss is small,  
 And danger great, they challenge all :  
 Print new additions to their Feats,  
 And Emendations in Gazets ;  
 And when, for furious haste to run,  
 They durst not stay to fire a Gun :  
 Have don't with Bone-fires, and at home,  
 Make Squibs and Crackers overcome.

To set the Rabble on a Flame,  
 And keep their Governours from Blame,  
 Disperse the News, the Pulpit tells,  
 Confirm'd with Fire-works, and with Bells :  
 And though reduc'd to that Extream,  
 They have been forc'd to sing Te Deum ;  
 Yet, with Religious Blasphemy,  
 By flattering Heaven with a Lie,

And

*And for their Beating, giving Thanks,  
Th' have rais'd Recruits, and fill'd their Banks ;  
For those who run from the Enemy,  
Engage them equally to fly.  
And when the Fight becomes a Chace,  
Those win the Day, that win the Race ;  
And that which would not pass in Fights,  
Has done the Feat with easie Sights.  
Recover'd many a desp'rate Campaign,  
With Bourdeaux, Burgundy and Champain.  
Restor'd the fainting High and Mighty  
With Brandy-Wine and Aqua-vita.  
And made them stoutly overcome,  
With Bacrach, Hocamore and Mum :  
Whom, the uncontroul'd Decrees of Fate  
To Victory necessitate ;  
With which, although they run or burn,  
They unavoidably return :  
Or else their Sultan-Populaces  
Still strangle all their routed Bassa's.*

Quoth



*Quoth Hudibras, I understand  
What Fights thou mean'st at Sea and Land;  
And who those were that run away,  
And yet gave out th' had won the day:  
Although the Rabble souc'd them fort,  
O'er Head and Ears in Mud and Dirt.  
'Tis true, our Modern way of War  
Is grown more politick by far;  
But not so resolute and bold,  
Nor ty'd to Honour, as the Old.  
For, now they laugh at giving Battel,  
Unless it be to Herds of Cattel:  
Or fighting Convoys of Provision,  
The whole design of the Expedition.  
And not with down-right blows to rout  
The Enemy, but eat them out:  
As Fighting in all Beasts of Prey,  
And Eating are perform'd one way,*

To give defiance to their teeth,  
 And fight their stubborn Guts to death,  
 And those atchieve the high'st Renown,  
 That bring the other Stomachs down,  
 There's now no fear of wounds nor maiming,  
 All dangers are reduc'd to Famine,  
 And Feats of Arms, to Plot, Design,  
 Surprize, and Stratagem, and Mine.  
 But have no need, nor use of Courage,  
 Unless it be for Glory, or Forrage:  
 For if they fight, 'tis but by chance,  
 When one side vent'ring to advance,  
 And come uncivilly too near,  
 Are charg'd unmercifully ith' Rere:  
 And forc'd with terrible resistance,  
 To keep hereafter at a distance;  
 To pick out Ground to incamp upon  
 Where store of largest Rivers run,  
 That serve instead of peaceful Barriers  
 To part th' Engagements of their Warriors.

N

Where

Where both from side to side may skip,  
 And only encounter at Bo-peep.  
 For Men are found the stouter hearted,  
 The certainer th' are to be parted.  
 And therefore post themselves in Bogs,  
 As the ancient Mice attack'd the Frogs :  
 And made their mortal Enemy,  
 The Water-Rat, their great Ally.  
 For 'tis not now, who's stout and bold ;  
 But who bears Hunger best, and Cold :  
 And he's approv'd the most deserving,  
 Who longest can hold out at starving :  
 But he that routs most Pigs and Cows,  
 The formidablest Man of Prowess.  
 So, the Emperor Caligula,  
 That triumph'd o'er the British Sea ;  
 Took Crabs and Oysters Prisoners,  
 And Lobsters, 'stead of Curasiers ;  
 Engag'd his Legions in fierce Bustles,  
 With Periwinkles, Prawns and Muscles :

And

And led his Troops with furious Gallops,  
 To charge whole Regiments of Scallops.  
 Not like their ancient way of War,  
 To wait on his Triumphal Carr,  
 But when he went to Dine or Sup,  
 More bravely eat his Captives up;  
 And left all Wars by his Example,  
 Reduc'd to vict'ling of a Camp well.

Quoth Ralph, by all that you have said,  
 And twice as much that I could add,  
 'Tis plain, you cannot now do worse,  
 Than take this out-of-fashion'd course:  
 To hope by stratagem to woo her,  
 Or waging Battle to subdue her.  
 Though some have done it in Romances,  
 And bang'd them into amorous Fancies,  
 As those who won the Amazons,  
 By wanton rubbing of their bones:

*And stout Rinaldo gain'd his Bride  
By Courting of her Back and Side.  
But since those times and feats are over,  
They are not for a Modern Lover :  
When Mistresses are too cross-grain'd,  
By such Addresses to be gain'd :  
And if they were, would have it out,  
With many other kind of Bount.  
Therefore I hold no Course s' infesible  
As this of force to win the Jezabel,  
To storm her heart, by th' Antick Charms  
Of Ladies Errant, force of Arms ;  
But rather strive by Law to win her,  
And try the Title you have in her,  
Your case is clear, you have her Word,  
And me to witness the Accord.  
Besides two more of her Retinue,  
To testifie what pass'd between you.  
More probable, and like to hold,  
Than Hand, or Seal, or breaking Gold*

*For*

For which so many that renounc'd  
Their plighted Contracts, have been trounc'd.  
And Bills upon Record been found,  
That forc'd the Ladies to compound :  
And that, unless I miss the matter,  
Is all the business you look after :  
Besides, Encounters at the Bar,  
Are braver now, than those in War,  
In which the Law does Execution,  
With less Disorder and Confusion :  
Has more of Honour in't some hold,  
Not like the New way, but the Old.  
When those the Pen had drawn together,  
Divided Quarrels with the Feather,  
And winged Arrows kill'd as dead,  
And more then Bullets now of Lead.  
So all their Combats now, as then,  
Are manag'd chiefly by the Pen.  
That does the Feat, with braver Vigours,  
In words at length, as well as Figures.

*Is Judge of all the World performs,  
In voluntary Feats of Arms.  
And whatso'ere's atchiev'd in Fight,  
Determines which is wrong or right ?  
For whether you Prevail or Lose,  
All must be try'd there in the close.  
And therefore 'tis not wise to shun,  
What you must trust to, ere y' have done.*

*The Law, that settles all you do,  
And marries where you did but woo.  
That makes the most perfidious Lover,  
A Lady, that's as false, recover :  
And if it judge upon your side,  
Will soon extend her for your Bride ;  
And put her Person, Goods, or Lands,  
Or which you like best int' your hands ;*

*For Law's the Wisdom of all Ages  
And manag'd by the ablest Sages,*



*Who through their Bus'ness at the Bar.  
Be but a kind of Civil War.  
In which th'ingage with fiercer Dudgeons  
Than e're the Grecians did and Trojans.  
They never manage the Contest,  
To impair their publick Interest;  
Or by their Controversies, lessen  
The dignity of their Profession:  
Not like us Brethren, who divide  
Our Common-wealth, the Cause and Side,  
And though w' are all as near of Kindred  
As the outward Man is to the Inward;  
We agree in nothing but to wrangle  
About the slightest single fangle,  
While Lawyers have more sober sense,  
Than to argue at their own expence.  
But make their best Advantages,  
Of other quarrels, like the Swiss,  
And out of Foreign Controversies,  
By aiding both sides, fill their Purses.*

*But have no int'rest in the Cause,  
For which th' engage, and wage the Laws:  
Nor further Prospect than their Pay,  
Whether they lose or win the Day.  
And though th' abounded in all Ages,  
With sundry learned Clerks, and Sages;  
Though all their business be Dispute,  
With which they canvas every Suit;  
Th' have no disputes about their Art,  
Nor in Polemicks controvert.  
While all Professions else are found,  
With nothing but Disputes & abound;  
Divines of all sorts, and Physicians,  
Philosophers, Mathematicians;  
The Gallenist, and Paracelsian,  
Condemn the way each other deals in.  
Anatomists dissect and mangle,  
To cut themselves out Work to wrangle.  
Astrologers dispute their Dreams;  
That in their sleeps they talk of Schemes.*

*And*

*And Herald's stickle, who got who,  
So many hundred Years ago.*

*But Lawyers are too wise a Nation,  
T' expose their Trade to Disputation :  
Or make the busie Rabble Judges,  
Of all their secret Piques, and Grudges :  
In which whoever wins the day,  
The whole Profession's sure to pay.*

*Beside, no Mountebanks, nor Cheats  
Dare undertake to do their Feats ;  
When in all other Sciences,  
They swarm, like Insects, and Increase :  
For what Bigot durst ever draw,  
By Inward Light, a Deed in Law ?  
Or could hold forth, by Revelation.  
An Answer to a Declaration ?  
For those that meddle with their Tools  
Will cut their Fingers, if th' are Fools.*

*And*

*And if you follow their Advice,  
In Bills and Answers, and Replies :  
They'l write a Love-letter in Chancery  
Shall bring her upon Oath to Answer ye.  
And soon Reduce you to b' your Wife,  
Or make her weary of her Life.*

The *Knight* who us'd with *Tricks* and  
To Edifie by *Ralpho's Gifts* : (*Shifts*,  
But in appearance cry'd him down,  
To make them better seem his own,  
(All *Plagiary's* Constant Course  
Of *sinking*, when they take a *Purse*)  
Resolv'd to follow his Advice,  
But kept it from him in disguise:  
And after stubborn Contradiction,  
To Counterfeit his own Conviction,  
And by Transition, fall upon  
The Resolution, as his own.

Quoth he; *This Gambol thou advisest,*  
*Is of all others, the unwiseſt;*  
*For if I think by Law to gain her,*  
*There's nothing ſillier nor vainer.*  
*'Tis but to hazard my Pretence,*  
*Where nothing's certain but th' Expence.*  
*To act againſt my ſelf, and traverse*  
*My Suit and Title to her Favours.*  
*And if ſhe ſhould, which Heaven forbid;*  
*O'rethrow me, as the Fidler did,*

*What after-course have I to take,*  
*'Gainſt loſing all I have at Stake?*  
*He that with injury is griev'd,*  
*And goes to Law to be reliev'd;*  
*Is ſillier than a ſcottish Chews.*  
*Who when a Thief has Rob'd his houſe;*  
*Applies himſelf to Cunning-men*  
*To help him to his Goods again.*

*When*

*When all he can expect to gain,  
Is but to squander more in vain :  
And yet I have no other way,  
But is as difficult, to play.  
For to reduce her, by main force,  
Is now in vain, by fair means, worse :  
But worst of all, to give her over,  
Till she's as desperate to recover.  
For bad Games are thrown up too soon,  
Until th' are never to be won.  
But since I have no other Course,  
But is as bad t' attempt, or worse :  
He that complies against his Will,  
Is of his own Opinion still ;  
Which he may adhere to, yet disown,  
For Reasons to himself best known :  
But 'tis not to be avoided now,  
For Sidrophel resolves to sue :  
Whom I must answer, or begin  
Inevitably, first with him.*

*For*

For I've receiv'd Advertisement,  
By times, enough of his intent ;  
And knowing, he that first complains,  
Th' advantage of the business gains.  
For Courts of Justice understand  
The Plaintiff to be eldest hand ;  
Who what he pleases may averr  
The other nothing till he swear :  
Is freely admitted to all Grace,  
And Lawful Favour by his place ;  
And for his bringing Custom in,  
Has all Advantages to win.  
I, who resolve to oversee  
No lucky Opportunity,  
Will go to Counsel, to advise  
Which way t' encounter or surprize.  
And after long consideration,  
Have found out one to fit th' occasion ;  
Most apt, for what I have to do,  
As Counsellor, and Justice too.

And



And truly so, no doubt, he was,  
A Lawyer fit for such a Case.

An *Old Dull Sot* ; wh' had told the Clock,  
For many years at *Bridewel-Dock*,  
At *Westminster*, and *Hickses-Hall*,  
And *Hiccius-Dockius* play'd in all ;  
Where in all *Governments*, and *Times*,  
H' had been both *friend*, and *foe* to *Crimes*,  
And us'd two equal ways of gaining,  
By *hindring Justice*, or maintaining ;  
To many a *Whore* gave *Priviledge*,  
And whip'd for want of *Quarteridge*,  
*Cart-loads of Bawds*, to *Prison* sent  
For b'ing behind a *Fortnights Rent*.  
And many a trusty *Pimp* and *Croney*,  
To *Puddle-dock*, for want of money.  
Ingag'd the *Constable* to seize  
All those, that would not break the *Peace*.

Nor

Nor give him back his own foul words,  
Though sometimes *Commoners or Lords* :  
And kept 'em Prisoners, of Course,  
For being *sober at ill hours*.  
That in the Morning he might Free,  
Or bind 'em over, for his Fee.  
Made *Monsters fine*, and *Puppet plays*,  
For leave to practice, in their ways :  
Farm'd out all Cheats, and went a share,  
With th' *Headborough* and *Scavenger*,  
And made the Dirt i'th' Streets Compound,  
For taking up the Publick Ground :  
The *Kennel* and the *King's High-way*,  
For being unmolested, Pay.  
Let out the *Stocks*, and *Whipping-Post*,  
And *Cage*, to those that gave him most ;  
Impos'd a Tax on *Bakers Ears*.  
And for *False Weights* on *Chandellers*.  
Made *Victuallers*, and *Vintners Fine*  
For Arbitrary *Ale* and *Wine*.

But

But was a kind and constant Friend  
 To all that *Regularly* offend :  
 As *Residentary Bawds*,  
 And *Brokers that receive stoll'n Goods* ;  
 That cheat in *Lawful Mysteries*,  
 And pay *Church-duties*, and *his Fees* ;  
 But was implacable and auker'd  
 To all that *Interlop'd*, and *Hawker'd*.

To this brave Man, the Knight repairs  
 For Counsel, in his *Law-Affairs* ;  
 And found him mounted, in his *Pew*,  
 With *Books*, and *Money* plac'd, for shew,  
 Like *Nest-eggs*, to make *Clients lay*,  
 And for his false Opinion pay :  
 To whom the Knight, with comely Grace,  
 Put off his Hat, to put his Case :  
 Which he as proudly entertain'd.  
 As the other courteously strain'd.

And

And to assure him, 'twas not that  
He look'd for ; Bid him put on's Hat.

Quoth he, there is one Sidrophel  
Whom I have cudgel'd—Very well.  
And now he brags, & have beaten me.  
Better, and better still, quoth he.  
And vows to stick me to a Wall  
Where e're he meets me—best of all.  
'Tis true, the Knave has taken's Oath  
That I rob'd him—Well done in troth.  
When h' has confest he stole my Cloak,  
And pick'd my Fob, and what he took,  
Which was the cause that made me bang him,  
And take my Goods again—marry bang him.  
Now whether I should, before hand  
Swear he rob'd me ? I understand,  
Or bring my Action of Conversion  
And Trover for my Goods ? Ah Whorson.

Or if 'tis better to indite,  
And bring him to his Trial? — Right,  
Prevent what he designs to do,  
And swear for th' State against him? — True.  
Or whether ~~he~~ that is Defendant  
In this Case, has the better end on't ;  
Who putting in a new cross-bill,  
May traverse th' Action — better still.  
Then there's a Lady too. — I marry,  
That's easily prov'd accessary.  
A Widow, who by solemn Vows,  
Contracted to me, for my Sponse,  
Combin'd with him to break her word,  
And has abetted all — Good Lord,  
Suborn'd the afore said Sidrophel,  
To tamper with the Dev'l of Hell.  
Who put me into horrid fear,  
Fear of my Life, — Make that appear.  
Made an assault, with Fiends and Men.  
Upon my body. — Good agen.

And

*And kept me in a deadly fright  
And false Imprisonment all Night,  
Mean while, they rob'd me, and my Horse,  
And stole my Saddle, — worse and worse;  
And made mount upon the bare-ridge,  
To avoid a wretcheder miscarriage.*

*Sir, quoth the Lawyer, not to flatter ye,  
You have as Good, and Fair a Battery,  
As heart can wish, and need not shame  
The proudest Man alive to claim.*

*For if th' have us'd you, as you say,  
Marry, quoth I, God give you joy,  
I would it were my Case, I'd give,  
More than I'll say, or you'll believe.*

*I would so trounce her, and her Purse,  
I'd make her kneel for bett'r or worse;  
For Matrimony, and Hanging here,  
Both go by destiny so clear,*

And

*That you as sure, may Pick and Choose,  
As Cross I win, and Pile you lose.  
And if I durst, I would advance  
As much, in Ready Maintenance ;  
As upon any Case I've known:  
But we that practice dare not own,  
The Law severely contrabands,  
Our taking Business off Mens hands ;  
'Tis Common barratry, that bears  
Point blank an Action 'gainst our Ears,  
And crops them, till there is not Leather  
To stick a Pin in, left of either ;  
For which, some do the Sommer-sault  
And o'er the Bar, like Tumblers, vault.  
But you may swear at any rate  
Things not in Nature, for the State :  
For in all Courts of Justice here  
A Witness is not said to swear,  
But make Oath, that is, in plain terms  
To forge whatever he affirms :*

*Is bank*



(I thank you, quoth the Knight, for that,  
Because 'tis to my purpose pat——)  
For Justice, though she's painted blind,  
Is to the weaker side enclin'd,  
Like charity, else right, and wrong,  
Could never hold it out so long,  
And, like blind Fortune, with a slight,  
Conveys Mens Interest, and Right,  
From Stiles's Pocket, into Nokeses :  
As easily as Hocus Pocus.  
Plays fast and loose, makes Men Obnoxious,  
And clear again, like Hiccius-Doctius.  
Then whether you would take her life,  
Or but recover, her for your Wife :  
Or be content with what she has,  
And let all others matters Pass,  
The Business to the Law's alone,  
The proof is all it look's upon.  
And you can want no Witnesses,  
To swear to any thing you please.

*That hardly get their meer Expences  
By th' Labor of their Consciences,  
Or letting out to hire, their Ears,  
To Affidavit Customers :  
At inconsiderable values,  
To serve for Jury-men, or Tales,  
Although retain'd in th' hardest matters,  
Of Trustees, and Administrators :  
For that, quoth he, let me alone,  
W' have store of such, and all our own,  
Bred up and tutor'd, by our Teachers,  
The ablest of Conscience-stretchers.  
That's well! Quoth he, But I should Guesse,  
By weighing of Advantages.  
Your surest way is first to Pitch  
On Boungey, for a Water-witch:  
And when y' have hang'd the Conjurer,  
Y' have time enough to deal with her.  
In th' Intrim; Spare for no Trepan,  
To draw her Neck, into the Banes;.*

Ply her with Love-Letters, and Billets,  
 And Bait'em well, for Quirks, and Quillets,  
 With Trains t' inveigle and surprise,  
 Her Heedless Answers, and Reply's:  
 And if she miss the Moustrap-Lines,  
 They'll serve for other By-Designs:  
 And make an Artist understand,  
 To Copy out her Seal, or Hand:  
 Or find void Places in the Paper,  
 To steal in something to Intrap her.  
 'Till with her worldly Goods, and Body,  
 Spight of her heart, she has indow'd ye

Retain all sorts of Witnesses,  
 That ply ith' Temples, under Trees.  
 Or walk the Round, with Knights o' h Posts:  
 About the Cross-leg'd Knights, their hosts,  
 Or wait for Customers, between  
 The Pillar-Roms in Lincolns-Inn.

*Where Vouchers, Forgers, Common-bayl,  
And Affidavit-men, ne'r fail  
T' expose to Sale, all sorts of Oaths,  
According to their Ears, and Cloaths.  
Their only Necessary Tools,  
Besides the Gospel, and their Souls.  
And when y' are furnish'd with all Purveys  
I shall be ready at your service.*

*I would not give, quoth Hudibras,  
A straw to understand a Case,  
Without the admirabler skill  
To Wind, and Manage it at Will:  
To Vere, and Tack, and steer a Cause,  
Against the Weather-gage of Laws;  
And Ring the Changes upon Cases,  
As plain, as Noses upon Faces.  
As you have well instructed me,  
For which you have earn'd ( here'tis ) your Fee,*

*I long*

I long to practice your advice  
And try the subtle Artifice :  
To bait a Letter, as you bid,  
As not long after, thus he did,  
For having pump'd up all his Wit,  
And humm'd upon it, thus he writ.

---

An Heroical Epistle of Hudibras  
to his Lady.

I Who was once as great as Cæsar,  
Am now reduc'd to Nebuchadnezer,  
And from as fam'd a Conqueror.  
As ever took degree in War,  
Or did his Exercise in Battel,  
By you turn'd out to Grass with Cattel.  
For since I am deny'd access  
To all my Earthly Happiness,

Am

Am fallen from the *Paradise*  
Of your good *Graces*, and fair *Eyes*.  
Lost to the World, and you, I'm sent  
To Everlasting Banishment,  
Where all the *Hopes* I had, t' *have won*  
*Your heart*, being dash'd, will break my own.  
Yet if you were not so severe  
To pass your doom, before you hear,  
You'll find, upon my just defence,  
How much y' have wrong'd my Innocence,  
That once I made a *Vow to you*,  
Which yet is unperform'd 'tis true ;  
But not, because it is unpaid,  
'Tis *Violated*, though *delay'd*:  
Or if it were, it is no fault  
So heinous, as you'd have it thought,  
To undergo the loss of Ears,  
Like vulgar *Hackney Perjurers*,  
For there's a difference in the case  
Between the *Noble*, and the *Base* :

Who

Who always are observ'd t' have don't,  
Upon as different an account :

The one for *great, and weighty Cause,*  
To salve in Honour *ugly Flaws.*

For none are like to do it sooner,  
Than those, who are nicest of their Ho-  
The other, for *base Gain, and Pay,* (nour.  
*Forswear, and Perjure, by the Day ;*  
And make th' exposing, and retailing  
Their Souls, and Consciences, a Calling.

It is no *Scandal, nor Aspersiō,*  
Upon a *Great and noble Person,*  
To say, he Nat'rally abhorr'd  
Th' old fashion'd trick, to keep his Word,  
Though 'tis perfidiousness, and shame,  
In meaner Men, to do the same.  
For to be able to *Forget,*  
Is found more useful, to *the Great :*

Then



Then *Gout*, or *Deafness*, or *bad Eyes*,  
To make 'em pass for wondrous wise.  
But though the *Law*, on Perjurers,  
Inflicts the *Forfeiture of Ears*;  
It is not *just*, that does exempt  
The *Guilty*, and *punish the innocent*,  
To make the Ears repair the wrong,  
Committed by th' *ungovern'd Tongue*;  
And when one Member is forsworn,  
Another to be cropt or torn.  
And if you should, as you design,  
By course of *Law* recover mine.  
You're like, if you consider right,  
To gain but little Honour by't.  
For he that for his Ladies sake  
Lays down his *Life*, or *Limbs at Stake*,  
Does not so much deserve her Favour,  
As he *that pawns his Soul* to have her.  
This y' have acknowledg'd I have done  
Although you now disdain to own:

But

But sentence, what you rather ought  
T' esteem *good Service*, than a *Fault*.  
Besides, Oaths are not bound to bear  
That *Literal Sense*, the words infer,  
But by the practice of the Age,  
Are to be judg'd how far th'ingage.  
And where the Sense by Custom's checkt,  
Are found *void*, and of *none effect*.  
For no Man takes, or keeps a Vow,  
But just as he sees others do,  
Nor are th' oblig'd to be so brittle,  
As not to yield, and bow a little,  
For as best temper'd Blades are found  
Before they break, to bend quite round,  
So truest Oaths are still most tough,  
And though they *bow*, are *breaking-proof*.  
Then wherefore shall they not b' allow'd  
In love a greater Latitude?  
For as the Law of Arms approves  
All way to Conquests, so should Loves;

And

And not be ty'd to true or false,  
But make that justest, that prevails,

For how can that which is above,  
All Empire, *High and Mighty Love*,  
Submit it's great Prerogative,

To any other power alive?  
Shall Love, that to no Crown gives place  
Become the subject of a Case?

The *Fundamental Law of Nature*,  
Be over-rul'd! by those made after?  
Commit the censure of *its Cause*

To any, but it's own *Great Laws*?  
Love, that's the Worlds preservative,  
That keeps all Souls of things alive?

Controuls the *Mighty pow'r of Fate*,  
*And gives* Mankind a longer date.

The Life of Nature, that restores,  
As fast as *Time and Death* devours,

To

To whose free gift, the World does owe  
Not only Earth but Heav'n too :  
For Love's the only Trade that's driven  
The *Interest of State in Heaven*,  
Which nothing but the Soul of Man,  
Is capable to entertain.  
For what can Earth produce, but Love  
To represent the Joys above ?  
Or who, but Lovers, can converse,  
Like Angels; by the Eye Discourse?  
Address, and complement by Vision,  
Make Love, and Court by intuition?  
And burn in amorous Flames as fierce,  
As those Celestial Ministers ?  
Then how can any thing offend  
In order, to so great an end ?  
Or Heav'n it self a Sin resent,  
That for its own supply was ment ?  
That merits in a kind mistake,  
A Pardon for the offences sake.

Or

Or if it did not, but the *Cause*  
 Were left to th' injury of *Laws*,  
 What tyranny can disapprove  
 There should be *Equity in Love*?  
 For Laws that are Inanimate,  
 And feel no sense of Love, or *Hate*:  
 That have no *Passion* of their own,  
 Not pity to be wrought upon,  
 Are only proper to inflict  
 Revenge, or *Criminals*, as strict:  
 But to have *Power to forgive*,  
 Is *Empire, and Prerogative*;  
 And 'tis in *Crowns*, a nobler *Jem*,  
 To grant a *Pardon*, then condemn.  
 Then since so few do what they ought,  
 'Tis great t'indulge a well-meant fault.  
 For why should he, who made address  
 All humble ways, without success,  
 And met with nothing in return,  
 But Insolence, Affronts, and Scorn,

Not

Not strive by Wit to countermine,  
 And bravely carry his Design?  
 He who was us'd, so unlike a Soldier,  
 Blown up with *Philters of Love-Powder*?  
 And after *letting Blood and Purging*,  
 Condemn'd to *voluntary Scourging*?  
 Alarm'd with many a horrid Fright,  
 And claw'd, by *Goblins*, in the Night?  
 Insulted on, Revil'd and Jeer'd,  
 With rude Invasion of his Beard?  
 And when your Sex was foully scandal'd,  
 As foully by the Rabble handled?  
 Attack'd by despicable Foes,  
 And drub'd with mean and vulgar blows;  
 And after all, to be debarr'd  
 So much as standing on his Gaurd?  
 When Horses being *spurr'd* and *prick'd*,  
 Have leave to *kick* for being *kick'd*;

Or why should you, whose *Mother Wits*  
Are furnish'd with all Perquisites ?  
That with your *Breeding Teeth* begin,  
And *Nursing Babies*, that *Lie in* ?  
B' allow'd to put all tricks upon  
Our *Cully-Sex*, and we use none ?  
We, who have nothing but frail Vows,  
Against your Statagems t' oppose ?  
Or Oaths, more feeble than your own,  
By which, we are no less put down ?  
You wound, like *Parthians*, while you fly,  
And kill with a *Retreating Eye* ;  
Retire the more, the more we press,  
To draw us into Ambushes.  
As *Pirates* all false Colours wear,  
T' intrap th' unwary Mariner :  
So Women, to surprize us, spread  
Their *borrowed Flags*, of *White and Red*.



Display 'em thicker on their Cheeks,  
 Than their old Grand-mothers, *the Pitts* :  
 And raise more Devils *with their Looks*,  
 Than *Conjurers less subtil Books*,  
 Lay Trains of *Amorous Intrigues*,  
 In *Towrs, and Curls, and Perruigs*.  
 With greater Art and cunning rear'd,  
 Than *Philip Ny's Thank-giving-beard*,  
 Prepost'rously t'intice, and Gain  
 Those to adore 'em they disdain :  
 And onely draw 'em in, to clog  
 With idle Names, a Catalogue,

A Lover is, the more he's brave,  
 T' his Mistress, but the more a Slave,  
 And whatsoever she commands  
 Becomes a Favour from her hands ;  
 Which he's oblig'd t' obey, and must,  
 Whether it be unjust, or just.

Then when he is compell'd by her  
T' Adventures, he would else forbear;  
Who, with his Honour, can withstand,  
Since Force is greater than Command?  
And when Necessity's obey'd  
Nothing can be unjust or bad:  
And therefore when the mighty Pow'rs  
Of Love, *your great Ally, and yours*;  
Joyn'd Forces, not to be withstood  
By frail enamoured Flesh and Blood;  
All I have done unjust or ill  
Was in obedience to your Will:  
And all the blame that can be due  
Falls to your Cruelty and you.

Nor are those Scandals I confest,  
Against my Will, and Interest,  
More than is daily done of course  
By all men, when th' are under force.

Whence

Whence some, upon the Rack, confess  
What th' *Hang-man and their Prompters please*.  
But are no sooner out of pain  
Then they deny it all again.  
But when the Devil turns Confessor,  
*Truth is a Crime*, he takes no pleasure  
To hear, or pardon, like the *Founder*  
*Of Lyars*, whom they all claim under.  
And therefore, when I told him none,  
I think it was the wiser done.  
Nor am I without Precedent,  
The first that on th' Adventure, went :  
All Mankind ever did of course,  
And daily does the same, or worse.  
For what *Romance* can shew a Lover,  
That had a *Lady to recover*,  
And did not steer a nearer Course,  
To fall aboard in his Amours?  
And what at first was held a Crime,  
Has turn'd to Honourable in time.

To what a height did *Infant Rome*,  
By Ravishing of Women come ?  
When Men upon their Spouses seiz'd,  
And freely Marry'd where they pleas'd ;  
They ne'r *Forswore* themselves nor *Ly'd*,  
Nor in the Minds they were in, *Dy'd*  
Nor took the pains *t' address* and *sue*,  
*Nor plaid the Masquerade* to wooe.  
Disdain'd to stay for Friends Consents,  
Nor juggled about Settlements :  
Did need no *License*, nor no *Priest*,  
Nor Friends, nor Kindred to assist ;  
Nor Lawyers, *to joyn Land and Money*,  
In th' *Holy State of Matrimony* :  
Before they setled Hands and Hearts,  
Till *Alimony*, or *Death* departs :  
Nor would endure to stay, until  
Th' had got the very *Bride's Good Will*

But

But took a wise and shorter Course,  
To win the Lady's, *Down-right Force*.  
And justly made 'em Prisoners then,  
As they have often since, us Men;  
With *Acting Plays*, and *Dancing Jiggs*,  
The luckiest of all Love's Intrigues:  
And when they had them at their pleasure,  
Then talkt of *Love*, and *Flames*, at leisure  
For, after *Matrimony's* over,  
He that holds out but *Half a Lover*,  
Deserves for ev'ry *Minute*, more  
Than *half a Year* of Love before:  
For which the Dames, in Contemplation  
Of that best way of Application,  
Prov'd Nobler Wives than e'er were known,  
By *Suit*, or *Treaty*, to be won:  
And such as all Posterity  
Could never equal, nor come nigh.

For Women first were made for Men,  
Not Men for them.—It follows then,  
That Men have Right to every one,  
And they no Freedom of their own :  
And therefore Men have pow'r to chuse,  
But they no Charter to refuse.

Hence 'tis apparent, that what Course  
So e'er we take to *your Amours*,  
Though by the indirectest way,  
'Tis no *Injustice*, nor *Foul Play*.

And that you ought to take that Course,  
As we take you, *for Bettr or Worse* ;  
And gratefully submit to those  
Who you, before another chose :  
For why should every savage Beast  
Exceed his *Great Lord's Interest* ?  
Have freer Pow'r, than he, in *Grace*,  
*And Nature*, o'er the Creature has ?

Because

Because the Laws he since has made  
Have cut off all the Pow'r he had ;  
Retrench'd the absolute Dominion,  
That Nature gave him, over Women.  
When all his Pow'r will not extend,  
One *Law of Nature* to suspend :  
And but to offer to repeal  
The smallest Clause, is to rebell.  
This, if Men rightly understood  
Their Privilege, they would make good;  
And not, like Sots, permit their Wives  
T'encroach on their Prerogatives.  
For which Sin, they deserve to be  
Kept, as they are, in Slavery.  
And this, some precious *Gifted Teachers*  
Unrev'rently reputed *Leachers* ;  
And disobey'd in making Love,  
Have vow'd to all the World, to prove  
And make ye suffer, as ye ought,  
For that uncharitable Fault.

But



But, I forget my self, and rove  
Beyond th' Instructions of my Love.  
Forgive me (*Fair*) and only blame  
Th' Extravagancy of my *Flame*,  
Since 'tis too much, at once to shew  
Excess of Love, and Temper too.  
All I have said that's *bad*, and *true*,  
Was never meant to aim at you ;  
Who have so Sov'rain a Controul  
O'er that poor Slave of yours, *my Soul* :  
That, rather than to forfeit you,  
Has ventur'd *loss of Heaven* too.  
Both with an equal Pow'r possess'd,  
To render all that serve you Blest :  
But none like him, who's destin'd, either  
To *have*, or *lose* you, both together.  
And if you'l but this fault release,  
(For so it must be, since you please,)

I'll pay down all that Vow, and more,  
Which you *commanded*, and I *swore*,  
And expiate upon my Skin,  
The Arrears in full of all my Sin.  
For, 'tis but just, that I should pay  
Th' accruing Penance for Delay.  
Which shall be done, until it move  
Your equal pity, and your Love.

The *Knight*, perusing *this Epistle*,  
Believ'd h' had brought her to *his Whistle*;  
And read it, like a jocund Lover,  
With great applause t' himself, twice over;  
Subscrib'd his *Name*, but at a Fit,  
And humble distance, to *his wit*;  
And dated it with wondrous Art,  
*Giv'n from the bottom of his heart*:  
Then seal'd it with *his Coat of Love*  
*A smoking Faggot*—and above

Upon

Upon a Scroll ——— *I burn, and weep,*  
And near it ——— *For her Ladyship ;*  
Of all her Sex, most excellent,  
These to her gentle Hands present.  
Then gave it to his Faithful Squire,  
With Lessons how t' observe and eye her.

She first consider'd which was better,  
To send it back, or burn the Letter:  
But, guessing that it might import,  
Though nothing else, at least, her Sport.  
She open'd it, and read it out,  
With many a smile, and learing Flout :  
Resolv'd to answer it in kind,  
And thus perform'd what she design'd.

The



THE  
LADY'S ANSWER  
TO THE  
KNIGHT.

**T**hat you'r a *Beast*, and turn'd to *Grass*,  
 Is no strange News, nor ever was ;  
 At least, to me, who once, you know,  
 Did from the Pound, *Replevin* you.  
 When both your *Sword*, and *Spurs*, were won  
 In Combat, by an *Amazon* ;  
 That *Sword*, that did (like Fate) determine  
 Th' Inevitable Death of *Vermine* :  
 And never dealt its furious blows,  
 But cut the *Threds* of *Pigs* and *Cows* ;  
 By *Trulla* was, in *single Fight*,  
 Disarm'd and wrested from its *Knight*.

Your

Your Heels *Degraded* of your Spurs,  
And in the Stocks, close Prisoners,  
Where still th' had Layn in base Restraint,  
If I, in pity of your Complaint,  
Had not on Honourable Conditions,  
Releas't'em from the worst of Prisons ;  
And what Return that favour met,  
You cannot (though you would) forget ;  
When, being free, you strove t' evade  
The Oaths you had in Prison made:  
Forswore your self, and first deny'd it ;  
But after own'd, and justify'd it ;  
And when y' had falsely broke one *Vow*,  
Absolv'd your self by *breaking two*.  
For while you sneakingly submit,  
And beg for Pardon at our Feet :  
Discourag'd by your guilty Fears,  
To hope for Quarter for your *Ears*.  
And doubting 'twas in vain to sue,  
You claim us boldly as your due.

Declare that Treachery and Force  
To deal with us is th' only Course.  
Who have no Title nor Pretence,  
To *Body, Soul, or Conscience*:  
But ought to fall to that Man's share,  
That claims us for his proper Ware.  
These are the Motives, which t' induce,  
Or fright us into Love, you use,  
A pretty new way of *Gallanting*,  
Between *Solliciting* and *Ranting*;  
Like sturdy Beggars, that intreat  
For *Charity* at once, and *threat*.  
But since you undertake to prove  
Your own Propriety in Love,  
As if we were but *Lawful Prize*  
In *War*, between two Enemies;  
Or *Forfeitures*, which ev'ry Lover  
That would but sue for, might recover.  
It is not hard to understand  
The *Myrry* of his Bold Demand:

That

That cannot at our Persons aim,  
But something capable of Claim.

'Tis not *those paultry counterfeit*  
*French Stones*, which in our Eyes you set :  
But our *Right Diamonds*, that inspire,  
And set your Amorous Heart on fire.  
Nor can those false *St. Martins Beads*,  
Which on our Lips you laid for *Reds* ;  
And make us wear, like *Indian Dames*,  
Add Fewel to your Scorching Flames.  
But those true Rubies of the Rock,  
Which in our Cabinets we lock.

'Tis not those Orient Pearls, our Teeth,  
That you are so transported with :  
But those we wear about our Necks,  
Produce those Amorous Effects,  
Nor is't those Threads of Gold, our *Hair*,  
The *Perewigs* you make us wear :  
But those bright Guineys in our Chests,  
That light the Wild-Fire in your Breasts.

These



These Love-tricks I've been vers'd in so,  
 That all their sly *Intrigues* I know.  
 And can unriddle, by *their Tones*,  
 The *Mystick Cabals*, and *Jargones*,  
 Can tell what *Passions*, by their *Sounds*,  
 Pine for the *Beauties* of my *Grounds*:  
 What *Raptures* fond, and *Amorous*  
 O' th' *Charms* and *Graces* of my *House*,  
 What *Ecstasy*, and *Scorching Flame*  
 Burns for my *Money*, in my *Name*,  
 What from th' unnatural desire  
 To *Beasts* and *Cattel*, take its fire.  
 What *tender Sigh*, and *trickling Tear*,  
 Longs for a *thousand Pound a Year*!  
 And *Languishing Transports* are fond  
 Of *Statute*, *Mortgage*, *Bill* and *Bond*.

These are th' *Attracts* which most *Men* fall  
 Inamour'd, at first sight, withal.  
 To these th' address with *Serenades*,  
 And Court with *dalls* and *Masquerades*;

And yet, for all the yearning Pain  
 Y' have suffer'd for their Loves, in vain :  
 I fear they'l prove so nice and coy,  
 To have and t' hold, and to enjoy ;  
 That all your Oaths, and Labour lost,  
 They'l ne'er turn Ladies of the post.  
 This is not meant to disapprove  
 Your Judgment in your Choice of Love ;  
 Which is so wise, the greatest part  
 Of Mankind study't as an Art.  
 For Love should, like a Deodand,  
 Still fall to th' owner of the Land :  
 And where there's Substance for its Ground  
 Cannot but be more firm, and sound,  
 Than that which has the flighten Basis  
 Of Airy Vertue, Wit, and Graces :  
 Which is of such thin Subtilty,  
 It steals and creeps in at the Eye  
 And, as it can't endure to stay  
 Steals out again as nice a way

But

But Love, that its Extraction owns  
From soild Gold, and precious Stones ;  
Must, like its shining Parents prove  
As Solid, and as Glorious Love.  
Hence 'tis, you have no way t' express  
Our Charms and Graces, but by these :  
For, what are Lips, and Eyes and Teeth,  
Which Beauty invades, and conquers with ?  
But Rubies, Pearls and Diamonds ;  
With which a Philiter Love commands ?

This is the way all Parents prove,  
In imagining their Children's Love ;  
That force 'em t' inter-marry and wed,  
As if th' were Burying of the Dead.  
Cast Earth to Earth, as in the Grave,  
To joyn in Wedlock all they have.  
And when the Settlement's in force,  
Take all the rest, For Better, or Worse ;  
For Mony has a Power above  
The Stars and Fate, to manage Love :

Whose Arrows, Learned Poets hold,  
That never miss, are *tipp'd with Gold*.  
And tho some say, the Parents claims  
To make Love in their Children's Names.  
Who, many times, at once, provide  
The Nurse, the Husband, and the Bride.  
Feel Darts and Charms, Attracts and Flames;  
And woo, and contract, in their Names.  
And as they Christen, use to marry 'em,  
And, like their Gossips, answer for 'em:  
Is not to give in Matrimony;  
But sell and prostitute for Money.  
'Tis better than their own Betrothing;  
Who often do't for worse than nothing.  
And when th' are at their own Dispose,  
With greater disadvantage chuse.  
All this is right! But for the Course  
You take to do't, by Fraud or Force:  
'Tis so ridiculous, as soon  
As told, 'tis never to be done.

No

No more than *Setters* can betray,  
That tell what Tricks they are to play.  
*Marriage*, at best, is but a Vow ;  
Which all Men either *break*, or *bow* :  
Then what will those forbear to do,  
Who *perjure*, when they do but *woo* ?  
Such as, beforehand, *swear and lye*,  
For *Earnest* to their Treachery :  
And, rather than a Crime confess,  
With greater, strive to make it less.  
Like Thieves, who, after Sentence past,  
Maintain their Innocence to the last.  
And when their Crimes were made appear  
As plain as Witnesses can swear.  
Yet, when the Wretches come to dye,  
Will take upon their Deaths a Lye.  
Nor are the Vertues, you confess  
T' your *Ghostly Father*, as you guesst,  
So slight, as to be justify'd,  
By being, as shamefully, deny'd.

As if you thought your Word would pass  
 Point-blank, on both sides, of a Case,  
 Or Credit were not to be lost,  
 B' a *Brave Knight Errant of the post.*  
 That *eats*, perfidiously, his *Word*,  
 And *swears his Ears through a two Inch Board* :  
 Can own the same thing, and disown ;  
 And perjure Booty, *Pro and Con.*  
 Can make the Gospel serve his turn,  
 And help him out to be forsworn ;  
 When 'tis laid hands upon, and kiss'd,  
 To be betray'd, and sold, like Christ.

These are the Vertues, in whose Name  
 A Right to all the World you claim :  
 And boldly challenge a Dominion,  
 In Grace and Nature, o'er all Women.  
 Of whom, no less will satisfy,  
 Than all the Sex, your Tyranny.  
 Although you'll find it a hard Province,  
 With all your crafty Frauds and Covins,



To govern such a numerous Crew,  
Who, one by one, now govern you :  
For if you all were *Solomons*,  
And *Wise* and *Great* as he was once,  
You'll find Th' are able to subdue,  
( *As they did him* ) and baffle you.  
And if you are impos'd upon,  
'Tis by your own Temptation done :  
That with your Ignorance invite,  
And teach us how to use the flight.  
For, when we find y' are still more taken  
*With false Attracts of our own making* ;  
Swear that's a *Rose*, and that a *Stone*,  
*Like Sots* to us that laid in on :  
And what we did but slightly prime,  
Most ignorantly daub in Rhime :  
You force us in our own Defences,  
To copy *Beams* and *Influences* ;  
To lay *Perfections* on the *Graces*,  
And draw *Attracts* upon our Faces :



And, in compliance to your Wit,  
Your own false Jewels counterfeit.  
For, by the practice of those Arts,  
We gain a greater share of Hearts :  
And those deserve in reason most,  
That greatest pains and study cost ;  
For, great Perfections are like Heav'n,  
Too rich a Present to be given.  
Nor are those *Master-strokes of Beauty*  
To be perform'd without *hard Duty* :  
Which, when th'are nobly done, and well,  
The simple Natural excel.

How fair and sweet *the planted Rose*  
Beyond the *Wild* in Hedges grows ?  
For, without Art, the Noblest Seeds  
Of Flow'rs degenerate to Weeds :  
How dull and rugged e'er tis Ground ?  
And Polish'd, looks a Diamond ?  
Though *Paradise* was e'er so fair,  
It was not kept so without Care.

The whole World, without *Art* and *Dress*,  
 Would be but one great *Wilderness*.  
 And Mankind but a Savage Herd,  
 For all that Nature has conferr'd.  
 This does but *Rough-hew*, and *Design*,  
 Leave *Art* to *Polish*, and *Refine*,

Though Women first were made for Men,  
 Yet Men were made for them agen:  
 For when (out-mitted by his Wife)  
 Man first turn'd Tenant, but, for *Life*.  
 If Women had not interven'd,  
 How soon had Mankind had an end  
 And that it is in *Being* yet,  
 To us alone, you are in *Debt*,  
 Then where's your liberty of *Choice*,  
 And our unnatural *No-voice*?  
 Since all the *Privilege* you *boast*,  
 And falsely *usurp'd*, or *vainly lost*,  
 Is now our *Right*; to *whose* *Creation*,  
 You owe your *Happy Restoration*.

Knew

And

And if we had not weighty Cause  
To not appear in making Laws,  
We could, in spite of all your Tricks,  
And Shallow, Formal Politicks;  
Force you, our Managements & obey,  
As we to yours (in shew ) give way.  
Hence 'tis, that while you vainly strive  
To advance your high Prerogative,  
You basely, after all your Braves,  
Submit, and own your selves our Slaves.  
And 'cause we do not make it known  
Nor Publickly our Int'rests own;  
Like Sots, suppose we have no shares  
In ord'ring you, and your Affairs :  
When all your Empire and Command  
You have from us at Second Hand,  
As if a Pilot, that appears  
To sit still only, while he steers :  
And does not make a noise and stir  
Like every common Mariner

Knew

Knew nothing of the *Card* nor *Star* ;  
 And did not guide the *Man of War*.  
 Nor we, because we don't appear  
 In *Councils*, do not govern there.  
 While like the *Mighty Prester John*,  
 Whose Person none dares look upon ;  
 But is preserv'd in *Close Disguise*  
 From being made cheap to *vulgar Eyes*.  
 W' enjoy as large a *Pow'r* unseen,  
 To govern him, as he does Men :  
 And, in the Right of our *Pope Joan*,  
 Make *Emp'ors* at our feet fall down.  
 Or *Joan the Pucel's* braver Name,  
 Our Right to *Arms* and *Conduct* claim  
 Who, though a *Spinster*, yet was able,  
 To serve *France* for a *Grand Constable*.  
 We make and execute all *Laws* ;  
 Can judge the *Judges*, and the *Cause*.  
 Prescribe all *Rules of Right or Wrong*,  
 To sh' *Long Rule*, and the *Longer Tongue* ;

'Gainst

'Gainst which the World *has no defence,*  
But our more pow'rful *Eloquence,*  
We manage things of greatest weight  
In all the World's *Affairs of State,*  
Are Ministers of War and Peace,  
That sway all *Nations* how they please.  
We rule all *Churches,* and their *Flocks,*  
*Heretical,* and *Orthodox.*  
And are the *Heavenly Vehicles*  
O' th' *Spirit,* in all *Conventicles.*  
By us is all *Commerce* and *Trade*  
*Improv'd,* and *manag'd,* and *decay'd.*  
For, nothing can go off so well,  
Nor bears that *Price,* as *what we sell.*  
We rule in ev'ry *Publick Meeting,*  
And make Men do what we judge fitting.  
Are Magistrates in all great *Towns;*  
Where Men do nothing but *wear Gowns.*  
We make the *Man of War strike Sail,*  
And to our braver *Conduct* *vail.*

And

And, when h' has chac'd his Enemies,  
Submit to us upon his Knees.  
Is there an *Officer of State*,  
*Untimely rais'd*; or *Magistrate*,  
That's *Haughty*, and *Imperious*?  
He's but a *Journey-man* to us.  
That, as he gives us cause to do't,  
Can keep him in, or turn him out.

We are your *Guardians*, that increase,  
Or *Waste* your Fortunes, how we please,  
And, as you humour us, can deal  
In all your Matters *ill or well*.

'Tis we that can dispose alone,  
Whether your *Heirs* shall be your *own*.  
To whose Integrity you must,  
In spite of all your Caution, trust,  
And 'less you fly beyond the Seas,  
Can fit you which what Heirs we please:  
And force you to own'em, though begotten  
By *French Valets*, or *Irish Foot-men*.

Nor



Nor can the rigorousst Course  
Prevail, unless to make us worse,  
Who, still the harsher we are us'd,  
Are further off from being reduc'd:  
And scorn t' abate, for any Ills,  
The least *Punctilio* of our *Wills*.  
Force does but whet our Wits to apply  
Arts, born with us, for Remedy:  
Which all your Politicks, as yet,  
Have ne'er been able to defeat.  
For, when y' have try'd all sorts of ways,  
What Fools d' we make of you in Plays?  
*While* all the Favours we afford,  
Are but to girt you with the Sword,  
To fight our Battels in our steads,  
And have your Brains beat out o' your Heads:  
Encounter in despite of Nature;  
And fight at once with Fire and Water,  
With Pyrates, Rocks, and Storms, and Seas,  
Our Pride and Vanity t' appease.

Kill



Kill one another, and cut Throats,  
For our good Graces, and best Thoughts;  
To do your Exercise for Honour,  
And have your Brains beat out the sooner;  
Or crack'd, as Learnedly, upon  
Things that are never to be known:  
And still appear the more industrious,  
The more your Projects are preposterous.  
To square the Circle of the Arts;  
And run stark mad to shew your Parts,  
Expound the Oracle of Laws,  
And turn them which way we see Cause.  
Be our Sollicitors, and Agents,  
And stand for us in all Engagements.  
And these are all the Mighty Powers,  
You vainly boast, to cry down ours.  
And what in real Value's wanting,  
Supply with Vapouring and Ranting:  
Because your selves are terrify'd,  
And stoop to one another's Pride:

Believe

Believe we have as little Wit  
 To be *Out-Hector'd*, and *Submit*;  
 By your *Example*, lose that Right  
 In *Treaties*, which we gain'd in *Fight*;  
 And terrify'd into an Awe,  
 Pass on our selves a *Salick Law*,  
 Or, as some Nations use, give place,  
 And truckle to your *Mighty Race*.  
 Let Men usurp th' unjust Dominion,  
 As if they were the better *Women*.

8 DE 53

FINIS.

K